

Chapter 901 - Extreme Cold Resistance Pills

"Welcome back to the Crystal Armory, esteemed guests."

The manager there recognized Su Yang at glance because of his unique and round figure.

"Are the clothes ready?" Su Yang asked him.

"Yes. In fact, we completed them last week."

"Please, follow me to the dressing room to try them out."

Su Yang nodded and followed him to a room at the back of the store, where their clothes that were actually large jackets were waiting.

"This one is yours, and this one is for the young lady." The manager showed them their clothes.

"If it doesn't fit or something feels off, please let me know."

"Mm... Not bad. It fits my body perfectly, and it's soft." Su Yang nodded in approval.

"What about you?" Su Yang turned to look at Xiao Rong.

"It's perfect," she said.

"Well, the fitting is perfect, but what about the formation in these clothes itself? After all, without the formation to protect us from the cold, this piece of clothing will only be an ordinary jacket."

The manager showed a confident smile on his face and said, "Our Crystal Armory has served customers for over 100,000 years. If we would dare to pull such a stunt or make such mistakes, we would've long been shut down. However, if you're not satisfied, you're free to check the formation yourself if you know how."

Su Yang nodded and said, "It's not that I don't trust your store. I just want to make sure, since the Frozen Asgard isn't a place for mistakes."

He then began making symbols in the air with his fingers, dumbfounding the manager with his profound speed and precise movements.

Once the symbols were completed, Su Yang touched the jackets with them, revealing the formation in their jackets.

Su Yang took a moment to inspect the formation before nodding with a satisfied smile on his face.

"Looks good to me. Thanks." Su Yang then handed the manager the tokens.

"I-I'm glad to hear that..." The manager muttered in a dazed voice, silently wondering to himself the identity of this fatty who'd just displayed profound formation skills that surpasses even the person who refined the jackets.

In fact, if it weren't for his lack of cultivation base, Su Yang could've easily created these jackets by himself without waiting for so long.

"Let's go." Su Yang said to Xiao Rong before leaving the building.

Once they were outside, Su Yang went to another store that was only a street away from the Crystal Armory.

Xiao Rong looked at the store with interest, as it emitted many unique scents that she has never experienced before.

Upon entering the store, Su Yang walked straight to the reception and said, "Let me get 10 Extreme Cold Resistance Pills of flawless quality."

"That would be 5 high-grade spirit stones," said the man behind the desk.

"5 high-grade spirit stones?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Since when did the price increase so dramatically? The last time I bought them, they were half as expensive."

"When was the last time you bought pills? A thousand years ago?" The man behind the counter sneered, and he continued, "Flawless quality pills are no longer as common as they used to be. In fact, the price of medicine and pills has skyrocketed since the God of Alchemy stopped conducting pills a thousand years ago."

"What?" Su Yang's eyes widened with shock when he heard this, and he asked, "Did she retire or something?"

Even though he asked this question, Su Yang knew that wasn't possible. Knowing the God of Alchemy who loved alchemy more than even her own life, there was no way that she'd give up on alchemy.

"Only she knows, but she hasn't produced a single pill for over a thousand years now despite countless people begging her to do so." The man shrugged.

"I see..."

Su Yang muttered in a low voice.

"Well? Are you going to buy the pills or what?"

Su Yang nodded before taking out 5 high-grade spirit stones and handing them to the man.

The man went to the back of the store before returning five minutes later with two bottles, each with 5 blue pills inside.

Su Yang accepted the two bottles and stored one inside his storage ring before handing the other one to Xiao Rong.

After leaving the store a moment later, Su Yang tilted his head to look at the sky with a somewhat dazed expression on his face.

"Just what is happening in the Divine Heavens?" he mumbled in a low voice.

Sometime later, Su Yang left the city with Xiao Rong on the flying treasure.

"We're going to fly straight to the entrance of the Frozen Asgard, and since flying treasures do not work there, we'll have to travel on foot." Su Yang said to her.

"I mean, you can fly, but it'll attract the magical beasts there, and you don't want that."

"Before we enter the Frozen Asgard, we need to consume one of the Extreme Cold Resistance Pill. Although the jacket is already good enough, it's never a bad idea to have an extra layer of defense in such a dangerous place."

Xiao Rong then said, "Wouldn't it be easier if I entered your Dantian, Master?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "Of course, you can do that, but I'm sure you'd rather stay outside with me, right?"

Xiao Rong quickly nodded her head, and she said, "Thank you, Master."

"You don't have to thank me. This is compensation for not letting you roam around freely even though I know that you really want to. Once the time is right, I will let you go play as much as you want, but for now, bear with it."

"I understand," Xiao Rong said.

Chapter 902 - Entering the Frozen Asgard

About two weeks after Su Yang and Xiao Rong left the city with their supplies, they arrived outside a massive mountain range that had an ongoing blizzard.

The blizzard was so powerful that they weren't able to see more than a dozen meters into the distance, and in their eyes, there was only the color white ahead.

"Wear the jacket and swallow one of the Extreme Cold Resistance Pills. The pill will last for two weeks." Su Yang said to Xiao Rong.

Xiao Rong nodded and wore the jacket that covered her from neck to toes, and once she wore the hood, it covered her head as well. She then consumed one of the blue pills, and she immediately felt her body growing warmer.

Once they were prepared, Su Yang descended the flying treasure about ten miles from the entrance of the Frozen Asgard before storing it away.

They began making their way towards the Frozen Asgard from there.

Even though they were many miles away from the Frozen Asgard, the chill from the blizzard was already affecting them.

When the jacket sensed the cold, it automatically activated the formation hidden within, and very quickly, the coldness subsided.

As they approached the entrance to the Frozen Asgard, Su Yang could see people camped beside the road.

Despite Frozen Asgard's dangerous environment, people from around the Divine Heavens would come to this place in search of treasures, and if they're not looking for treasures, they were here for training.

And because of the extreme cold, Frozen Asgard is not only the perfect place for Yin Element treasures to appear, it is also the perfect place for women to cultivate, hence why most of the people gathered there at this moment were women.

When Su Yang passed by these women, they all looked at him with interest.

In their eyes, two Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivators entering the Frozen Asgard was akin to seeking death, and it was rare to see men around this place when the Azure Lotus wasn't even close to blooming.

Su Yang also looked at these women with interest, but it was not because of their beauty.

Most of the women gathered here appeared to be disciples from various sects, and Su Yang recognized all of them by their uniforms.

'I recognize their uniforms, but I do not recognize these people... What a weird feeling.' Su Yang thought to himself.

Back when he was still active within the Four Divine Heavens, he would rarely not recognize a woman even if they were just an ordinary disciple, especially if they were cultivators from prominent sects.

The guards standing at the entrance of the Frozen Asgard raised their eyebrows when they saw Su Yang and Xiao Rong approaching them.

Although they were not ordinary guards and were only there to make sure no magical beasts escape from Frozen Asgard, they still couldn't help but stop Su Yang.

"Hey, are you sure you want to go inside? You're both only Sovereigns." The guards asked them.

"Yes." Su Yang nodded.

"Well... Good luck, I guess..."

The guards didn't say anything else, as it wasn't their job to decide who gets to go inside and who doesn't.

Su Yang and Xiao Rong entered the narrow entrance a moment later, and after walking for another ten miles in this narrow path, they have officially entered the Frozen Asgard.

The moment they stepped foot inside the Frozen Asgard, tiny ice particles began hitting them in the face, and despite covering themselves in spiritual energy, these seemingly ordinary ice particles tore right through them, making them feel as though there were insects pricking their face.

"Master, how will you know where to go? There's nothing but snow here..." Xiao Rong said to him.

Before them was a massive land of snow that went as high as Su Yang's legs, and for Xiao Rong, it consumed half of her body. And since they can only see a couple of meters into the distance, it was impossible to see where they're going.

"It's near impossible to navigate inside the Frozen Asgard through normal means. However, I know exactly how many steps we need to take to reach our destination. Just follow my steps and don't wander around because there are invisible holes everywhere in the Frozen Asgard that are covered in snow. One wrong step and you'll fall to your death."

Xiao Rong nodded.

"The first hidden passage is exactly 103,021 steps from this place. It'll probably take us around three days to get there, and we have a little less than 2 months left. Let's go."

Su Yang began walking in the land of snow with confident and large strides despite not being able to see where he was walking, and Xiao Rong followed him from behind.

One thousand steps... ten thousand steps... twenty thousand steps...

Su Yang subconsciously counted every single step he took, and after he reached a certain number of steps, he would turn either left or right, rarely stopping his movements.

Although Su Yang made it seem easy, almost like he was taking a stroll in the park, it was actually an incredible feat that unless one had extensive knowledge about the Frozen Asgard, one wouldn't be able to replicate it.

Three days later, they arrived in front of a narrow path in the middle of nowhere before they even knew it.

"This is the first hidden passage. It's actually about fifty thousand miles long. We can fly here since there won't be any powerful magical beasts and it's a straight passage from one end to the other." Su Yang said to Xiao Rong.

Thus, they stopped walking on foot and began flying through this passage with extreme speed, and since the blizzard couldn't reach this area, they were able to see much further than usual.

They would occasionally run into magical beasts in this passage, but they were all around the Sovereign Spirit Realm, and Su Yang would take care of them with his Sword Qi before they could even react.

A few days later, they reached the end of this passage.

"We're back to walking now, but the next passage is only around 20,000 steps away. Let's go."

Chapter 903 - Ice Cavern

A few hours after Su Yang and Xiao Rong exited the first hidden passage, they arrived at the second hidden passage that had a zigzagging pathway, which made it difficult if not near impossible to fly there without getting a headache.

Thus, Su Yang and Xiao Rong could only resort to walking this passage.

Ten minutes later, they encountered a large magical beast that resembled a wolf, and it was covered in white fur.

This magical beast emitted intense bloodthirst, and the moment it saw Su Yang and Xiao Rong, its eyes glowed with redness while its mouth drooled with saliva.

After months of wandering around, it has finally encountered humans.

However, before it can even fantasize about consuming these humans, Su Yang gently waved his sleeves, sending a blade of devastating Sword Qi flying towards it, mutilating its body in half almost instantly.

Half an hour later, they encountered another magical beast.

Then another ten minutes later.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows at how many magical beasts they have encountered thus far. Normally, he would rarely encounter a magical beast in the hidden passage if ever, yet he has already encountered a couple in just a few days, and they were only in the outer areas.

'Did something happen in the Frozen Asgard?' Su Yang wondered to himself.

There have only been a few occasions where magical beasts would show up in the hidden passages and outer areas— when a powerful magical beast chased the weaker magical beasts out from the inside.

A couple of hours later, Su Yang and Xiao Rong arrived at the exit of the hidden passage.

"Master..." Xiao Rong looked at him when they were suddenly blocked by a massive frozen ocean that reached the horizon after leaving the passage..

"It's alright. This frozen ocean has always been here." Su Yang said to her.

"Follow me."

Su Yang then began flying over the frozen ocean.

Xiao Rong didn't ask any questions and followed him.

The two of them continue to fly for almost an entire week on this seemingly endless ocean that has been frozen for heaven-knows-how-long.

"We're here." Su Yang suddenly said.

However, this cavern had a huge block of ice blocking it.

Once they landed, Su Yang said, "Give me a minute to remove the blockade. It's actually a formation."

He proceeded to sit in front of the cavern and closed his eyes, seemingly gathering spiritual energy.

After absorbing enough spiritual energy, Su Yang opened his eyes and began moving his arms very quickly.

Tens... hundreds... thousands of symbols began appearing in the air before flying towards the ice blocking the cavern.

A moment later, the ice block began melting, revealing a small entrance.

Su Yang entered this suspicious cavern in the middle of nowhere casually.

Once inside, there was a small room that resembled the interior of a cave, and there were a couple of words engraved on the ice wall, looking like sword marks.

"My love for you will last an eternity, just like this place that has been frozen since the Primordial Era..." Xiao Rong read the words on the ice wall in a low voice.

"Hearing these words coming from another's mouth makes me want to go back in time and convince the old me to not write these words." A bittersweet smile appeared on Su Yang's face.

"You wrote these words, Master?" Xiao Rong asked him.

"Yes, I wrote them. In fact, this little cavern was made by me, and I had even cultivated here for a few hundred years while waiting for the Azure Lotus to bloom."

"As for why we're here..." Su Yang pointed to the formation on the ground and continued, "This is a formation that will take us to the center of the Frozen Asgard."

"If we want to travel to the Frozen Azure Cave normally, it'll take us at least a couple of years even with the hidden passages since the Frozen Asgard is immensely vast. This formation is the only way we can reach our destination in a short amount of time."

"Hopefully, the formation is still functional. It's been at least twenty thousand years since I last used it, after all."

"Anyways, make yourself at home while I try to work this formation out. It'll take at least three days. If you want to look around this place, go ahead, but don't go too far. Though there's really nothing to see in this place besides the frozen ocean."

"Okay." Xiao Rong nodded before walking to the entrance without actually going outside, as the blizzard was still raging and she didn't like the sensation of ice fragments hitting her face.

Xiao Rong used her spiritual sense to look at the frozen ocean beneath the massive layer of ice, and to her surprise, there were many massive magical beasts dwelling deep within the water.

Furthermore, all of these magical beasts emitted power at the Ancient Realm if not even more powerful.

When the magical beasts sensed Xiao Rong looking at them, they released a powerful aura that caused the ocean to tremble slightly, sending chills down Xiao Rong's back.

If it were not for the unbreakable ice protecting Xiao Rong, the magical beasts would've definitely tried to attack her.

This was probably Xiao Rong's first time experiencing fear, and after that terrifying experience, she went back inside the cavern and remained close to Su Yang.

"Did you look inside the water?" Su Yang asked her after seeing her nervous expression.

Xiao Rong nodded silently.

"Hahaha... It was quite shocking, eh? The magical beasts dwelling inside the waters of the Frozen Asgard are some of the most powerful and terrifying entities in the Celestial Heaven. You don't want to mess with them. Luckily for us and the rest of the world, they cannot leave the water due to the layer of ice

separating the water and the outside world. If the ice ever melts and these guys leave the water, it's probably going to be a hellish experience for the Celestial Heaven." Su Yang laughed out loud.

Chapter 904 - Primordial Mammoth

Five days have passed since Su Yang and Xiao Rong arrived at the ice cavern. During this time, Su Yang remained still in the middle of the formation while Xiao Rong lazed around on the floor made of pure ice in her beast form.

"Okay, I am finally done. Fortunately, the formation is still intact. Although it was damaged, I managed to fix it, hence why it took two extra days."

"Xiao Rong, are you ready?" Su Yang asked her.

Xiao Rong transformed back into her human form before nodding.

"Give me a minute to seal this cavern back up." Su Yang then restored the ice block in front of the entrance."

Sometime later, both Su Yang and Xiao Rong stood on this invisible formation at the center of the room.

After taking a deep breath, Su Yang created a single symbol before dropping it on the formation.

The next second, the formation began flowing with spiritual energy before emitting beautiful blue light.

Whoosh!

Su Yang and Xiao Rong disappeared from the ice cavern, appearing a few hundred thousand miles away.

Once their transportation was completed, Xiao Rong looked around. They appeared to be inside another ice cavern, but it was much more spacious here compared to the last location.

"We are currently just right outside the center area, but we still need to travel another hundred thousand miles before we reach the Frozen Azure Cave." Su Yang said to her.

"However, before we enter the center of the Frozen Asgard, we must prepare ourselves."

Su Yang then walked to a certain spot in the ice cavern before releasing a small amount of his Sword Will.

The entire cavern suddenly began shaking, almost as though there was an active earthquake.

The trembling didn't last long, disappearing ten seconds later.

"What was that just now, Master?" Xiao Rong asked him.

He didn't immediately respond, merely pointing at the wall that suddenly had a hole in it, and inside this hole was a small wooden box that could fit even on a child's palms.

Su Yang retrieved the box and opened it to show Xiao Rong the inside.

"What is this?" Xiao Rong raised her eyebrows upon seeing the near-transparent object shaped into a perfect circle resting inside the box.

"This marble is our lifeline just in case something goes astray. It's an expensive treasure that allows you to 'set' a location. Once you have a location set, you can break the marble to return to that location with no limit, so no matter where you are in the Four Divine Heavens, you will be able to return to that location."

"If we run into trouble that even I cannot deal with, we will escape the Frozen Asgard using this marble. However, to be completely honest with you, I don't want to use this treasure, since there's a 99 percent chance that I will perish if I go to the set location in my current state..." Su Yang said with a weird smile on his face.

"Anyways, are you ready? The center area is completely different compared to the outer area."

They exited the ice cavern a moment later, and to Xiao Rong's surprise, the blizzard was nowhere to be seen. However, when she looked at the horizon, she could see a white wall.

"The center of the Frozen Asgard doesn't have any blizzards. In fact, the blizzard only circles around the Frozen Asgard like some kind of phenomenon. Nobody knows why, but if one looked at the Frozen Asgard from the starry sky, they'd be able to see a massive and thick white ring around the place. It's pretty neat."

"However, the blizzard is the least of everyone's worries in the Frozen Asgard."

Su Yang suddenly pointed in a certain direction and said, "Look over there."

Xiao Rong turned to look in the direction he was pointing, and she immediately noticed a small red dot moving in the sky.

"What is that?"

When Xiao Rong saw this red dot, her entire body shivered for some reason.

"That's the eye of a magical beast you're looking at," he said with a smile on his face.

"What?" Xiao Rong's eyes widened with surprise. That dot in the sky is an eye?

"That magical beast is named Primordial Mammoth, and it is one of the oldest and most powerful creatures in the Celestial Heaven. Its size is so huge that it could traverse hundreds of miles in a single step. As for its cultivation... Nobody really knows..." Su Yang said.

"Fortunately for us, the Primordial Mammoth doesn't leave the Frozen Asgard, and it's not aggressive... If we don't provoke it. The last time a cultivator provoked the Primordial Mammoth, the whole Celestial Heaven shook for an entire minute due to a single stomp from it. As for that individual who provoked it... Let's just say his body became so flat that it disappeared from existence."

"The Four Divine Heavens is filled with mythical and heaven-defying creatures such as the Primordial Mammoth. Pretty cool, right?"

Xiao Rong was speechless. The only thing she could feel when looking at the red dot was fear and dismay.

"Anyway, let's continue moving forward. The Frozen Asgard may be filled with dangerous magical beasts, but if you know where to go and where not to go, it's really not that bad." Su Yang said to her a moment later.

Thus, Su Yang and Xiao Rong continued their journey in the Frozen Asgard.

Meanwhile, about a hundred thousand miles away from Su Yang's location, after arriving at the Frozen Azure Cave, Luo Ziyi entered the small cave with a somewhat dazed look on her face.

The interior of the cave was quite beautiful. Despite having no light shining into the place, the walls emitted a gentle blue glow that illuminated the place, and there was a small pond at the center of this cave that emitted the most light.

One would expect the water in this pond to be frozen due to the extreme cold weather, but that was not the case, and the water even showed no signs of freezing.

Luo Ziyi approached the glowing pond and proceeded to stare at her reflection on the still water in silence for many minutes.

Chapter 905 - Underground

"Do you see that cave over there?" Su Yang suddenly said to Xiao Rong after walking for a couple of days without uttering a single word.

Xiao Rong turned to look at what Su Yang was looking at, and sure enough, there was a cave entrance there.

However, this entrance was barely big enough to fit a single person inside.

"That cave will lead us underground, and once we enter it, we won't be leaving for the next 50,000 miles. It is also the last safe shortcut in the Frozen Asgard. There are still hidden passages after this one, but they won't be as safe, as they are quite spacious so the larger magical beasts sometimes wander in there."

A few minutes later, they arrived before the cave entrance, and Su Yang had to forcefully squeeze himself through the narrow entrance because of his round figure. In fact, he even damaged the entrance a little by doing so.

As for Xiao Rong, her petite frame allowed her to enter with ease.

Once they were inside, it became incredibly dark— so dark that unless one had some kind of vision technique that allowed them to see the dark, they wouldn't be able to see a thing.

Of course, Su Yang had the perfect technique for this place, and after covering his eyes with some spiritual energy, he was able to see everything without any problems.

"Let's consume another Extreme Cold Resistance Pill. Even though there aren't any blizzards here, there are some areas in this place that are even colder than outside." Su Yang said.

After consuming the pill, they began moving again.

As they walked deeper and deeper into the cave, Xiao Rong noticed that they were slowly descending deeper into the ground, and eventually, they arrived before a massive slope made of pure ice that was so deep that they couldn't physically see the bottom of the slope.

"Don't worry, this place may seem dangerous, but it's actually pretty fun." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

He then took a seat at the edge of the slope and patted his l.a.p.

"Come sit here."

Xiao Rong nodded and took a seat on his l.a.p.

Su Yang then embraced her from behind before pushing himself down the icy slope.

The two of them immediately began sliding down the slope at extreme speed.

In fact, it took them nearly half an hour to reach the end.

"What do you think?" Su Yang asked her afterward, feeling a weird sensation on his b.u.t.t.o.c.k.s after sliding down for so long.

"It was fun," she said.

He smiled, "Then let's continue."

The cave was dead silent, and the only thing they could hear was the sound of their own footsteps, breathing, and the beats of their heart.

They continued to walk without any rest for two days until Su Yang came to a sudden halt.

"Wait."

Xiao Rong, who was dozing off and had been subconsciously walking this entire time, snapped back to reality when she bumped into Su Yang's back.

"What is it, Master?" Xiao Rong asked him afterward.

"I can sense people ahead of us," he said to her.

Xiao Rong then used her spiritual sense to look further into the distance, and sure enough, there were people there.

In fact, there appeared to be hundreds if not thousands of people there, and all of them were dressed in similar clothes, almost like disciples from a sect.

"Hmmm... Now this is a surprise..." A profound smile appeared on Su Yang's face once he recognized their uniform.

Although it took him a moment, there was a good reason why he didn't recognize them instantly.

"They're the Restrained Yin Sect, one of the most secretive powers in the Celestial Heaven and also one of the more powerful places. Many cultivators can live their entire life not seeing a single disciple from

that place since they rarely leave the sect, and when they do, they go to places where people normally don't go. Also, they're a female-only sect."

"They also cultivate a special technique that allows them to eat Yin Element treasures with ease while obtaining its full effects while normal people would only be able to take advantage of a small portion of the treasures' effects."

"Now that I think about it, their sect master mentioned one time about how they would train in the Frozen Asgard every 1,000 years for 10 years, but she never told me the exact location. I should've expected it would be this location since the area up ahead is a little special in the way that it has an extreme amount of Yin Element gathered— enough to kill even a Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivator like me if I am not prepared."

"Anyway, if we don't disturb them, they probably won't make things too difficult for us, but be prepared to be questioned by them."

Su Yang said, and he began approaching them.

Once Su Yang was close enough to see their faces, one of the disciples that wore a different uniform than the others approached him with a serious look on her face, and she was an extremely beautiful middle-aged woman.

"Who are you and what is your purpose here?" She asked him with a hint of surprise hidden within her gaze.

After all, it was quite shocking to see two Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivators appearing so deep within the Frozen Asgard. It could even be considered a miracle that they made it here without any injuries.

"Name's Xiao Yang, and we're just passing through this place to get to the other side." Su Yang said to her with a friendly smile on his round face.

—

Chapter 906 - Restrained Yin Sect

"Xiao Yang? What is your purpose for coming to this dangerous place? I'm talking about the Frozen Asgard." The woman asked him, clearly still doubtful of his identity and purpose there.

"I have some business at the Frozen Azure Cave, and this cave is the safest route there." Su Yang responded.

"And you can't tell me the reason?" The woman continued to question him for more details.

As a highly secretive and seclusive sect, it was normal for them to act like this, as there were plenty of people spying on them, and any new information about their sect would be worth a fortune to information brokers and those with unkind intentions.

After a moment of silence, he said, "We're meeting someone there. As for that person's identity, I'm sorry, but I cannot tell you."

The best thing to do in this situation was to tell them the truth without revealing everything, as he knew that disciples of the Restrained Yin Sect have multiple methods that can tell whether someone was lying or not.

Furthermore, this beautiful woman before him was an Ancient Realm expert. Even if Xiao Rong can defeat her with his assistance, it would be a pain in the a.s.s to deal with the other disciples, and he didn't want to hurt these people, as he has a special relationship with their sect master.

The woman narrowed her eyes at Su Yang's chubby face before turning to look at Xiao Rong.

"The two of you managed to make it to the center of the Frozen Asgard without any injuries? In fact, you look extremely calm, almost like you're taking a stroll in the park."

"Well, I happen to have a lot of knowledge regarding the Frozen Asgard, including all of the hidden passages, hence why I am here right now," he said.

"Even if that is the case— that you know all of the hidden passages, getting here unscathed is an entirely different story. We also took the hidden passages here, but none of us made it here unscathed," said the woman, continuing to doubt him.

"I don't know what to tell you. Perhaps we got super lucky." Su Yang shrugged.

The woman didn't find his joke funny and even pulled out a sword before pointing it at him.

Su Yang raised his hands in a surrendering manner and said, "Whoa, calm down. I know the Restrained Yin Sect is a secretive place, so I don't blame you at all for your over-the-top cautiousness, but you need to calm down. Not everyone in this world is out to spy on you ladies."

"W-What did you just say?" The woman's eyes widened with surprise.

Meanwhile, the woman questioning Su Yang suddenly began emitting killing intent, and she spoke in a cold voice, "Unless you're a spy, there's no way you'd know that we're from the Restrained Yin Sect!"

"What? Your uniform says everything."

"That's impossible! These are not our ordinary sect uniforms! We only wear them when we go outside for training so that people won't recognize us!"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Yes, I know. I also know that your sect master is named Liang Xuemei, and she really likes to chew on ice. Oh, right. I can even tell you the hideout of your sect in the Eternal—"

BOOM!

The place suddenly shook as all of the disciples there suddenly began emitting killing intent.

If Su Yang dared to continue his sentence, they might kill him before he could even finish his sentence.

Su Yang smiled and said after a long pause, "Anyway, my point is that I already know everything there is to know about your Restrained Yin Sect, so there's no point in me spying on you guys."

"Who are you, really? How do you know so much about our sect?" The woman asked him with a deep frown on her face.

"I told you already. I'm Xiao Yang," he responded with a gentle smile on his face.

"Bullshit! You know damn well that's not what I want to know!" She exclaimed in an angry voice.

And she continued, "If you don't tell me, I will kill you right here and now!"

"Are you sure that you want to kill me when you don't know anything about me?" Su Yang said, the smile on his face turning cold.

"If I die today, your sect's million-year legacy might crumble, and you will be blamed for it."

Hearing Su Yang's words, the woman's body and facial expression froze.

"Anyway, I don't have all day here. I promise you that nothing will happen if you act like our encounter never happened today." Su Yang said, and he began moving again, walking around the woman.

To the disciples' surprise, the woman didn't attack Su Yang and allowed him to walk past her.

"Also, I will eventually visit the Restrained Yin Sect to speak with your sect master Liang Xuemei— if she's still the sect master. Until then, keep our meeting here a secret. We both know that she will most likely throw a tantrum if you tell her that some stranger you don't recognize has so much information about her sect."

"Elder... What should we do?" One of the disciples asked her afterward, breaking the silence.

The woman bit her lips and said, "Forget about that damn fatty! Forget about our conversation! Forget about everything that has happened here today!"

"If you want to experience the sect master's fury, by all means, go ahead and tell her what happened today!" she continued.

The disciples swallowed nervously when they imagined their sect master angry. If they do such a thing, they will not be the only ones to suffer, as every disciple in the sect will suffer alongside them, and none of them wanted that to happen.

After a moment of silence, one by one, the disciples began swearing that they wouldn't utter a single word about what happened today even if they were tortured.

—

Chapter 907 - Returning to the Surface

After leaving the Restricted Yin Sect behind, Su Yang released a sigh of relief.

"Fortunately, that elder was relatively new and still somewhat inexperienced. If it were any other elders, they would've probably killed me even if they knew the risks."

"Anyway, let's speed up. We have less than a month to reach the Frozen Azure Cave, and at our current pace, we will be late."

Xiao Rong nodded, and they proceeded to fly through the rest of the cave.

A couple of days later, they arrived before a massive underground lake that managed to remain as a liquid despite the cold temperature.

When Xiao Rong saw this lake, she instinctively stopped flying and even backed up a little bit, as she still recalled the magical beasts beneath the frozen ocean.

"Did the magical beasts in the frozen ocean traumatize you?" Su Yang chuckled when he saw her acting so nervous.

"Don't worry, while there are magical beasts inside the water, they're not as powerful as the magical beasts outside. In fact, they're actually extremely weak if we compare them to the others, as they are mostly below the Heavenly Spirit Realm."

"Furthermore, if you cook these magical beasts and eat their meat, it can improve your Yin Qi significantly. Do you want to try eating some?"

Xiao Rong nodded.

"Alright, give me a moment."

Su Yang then approached the lake and stood in front of the water.

After staring at the water in silence for many minutes, Su Yang suddenly moved his arm, sending a single strand of Sword Will into the water, almost like a fishing rod.

A moment later, he pulled his hand back, pulling the string out of the water, and at the end of the Sword Will, there was a blue-colored fish with semi-transparent scales the size of his arm.

Su Yang used his Sword Qi to decapitate its head before using his Alchemy Flames to cook it.

The scales on the fish automatically melted like ice the moment it touched the Alchemy Flames.

It only took a minute for the fish to fully be cooked.

"Here you go." Su Yang handed the cooked fish to Xiao Rong, whose eyes were flickering with excitement.

After her first bite, Xiao Rong continued to take chunks out of the fish, and in less than a minute, she consumed the whole fish.

"What do you think? Do you like it?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"Yes!"

Seeing Xiao Rong acting this lively for the first time, Su Yang smiled and said, "Do you want more? There are plenty of them in the water."

Xiao Rong quickly nodded her head.

Su Yang then returned to fishing for more fish.

An hour later, Xiao Rong had consumed over 100 fish in the water, and her Yin Qi improved by leaps and bounds.

"Are you satisfied now?" Su Yang asked her.

"Yes. Thank you, Master." Xiao Rong said.

"Then let's continue. There are places out there that sell these fish so you can eat more in the future."

Once they were prepared, Su Yang and Xiao Rong began flying over the lake until they reached the end about a day later.

At the end of the lake was a dead-end, but there was no ceiling above them, which made things pretty obvious.

"We're going to fly straight up now," he said to her.

A moment later, they began flying up, returning to the surface an hour later.

Once they landed, they began walking to the exit that was only a couple of minutes in the distance.

"Master, the ground is shaking." Xiao Rong said.

"Don't worry, it's normal. It's just the Primordial Mammoth moving, and we got close enough to it to experience it."

Xiao Rong raised her eyebrows. They actually got closer to the terrifying magical beast? Isn't that incredibly dangerous? What if it accidentally steps on them?

"Xiao Rong, you can stop suppressing your cultivation base for now. It'll be much safer for us since the magical beasts will think twice before they attack us."

"Okay, let's go outside."

A moment later, they left the cave, returning to the surface that was covered in snow.

And after walking for a little over ten minutes, a magical beast appeared before them.

This magical beast had the appearance of a leopard but with two immensely long and sharp fangs in its mouth, and its fur was completely white, blending in with the background.

If it were not for its elephant-like size, Su Yang wouldn't have noticed it so quickly, as its cultivation base was vastly above his own.

"It's a Divine Lord Realm magical beast... same level as Qiuyue." Su Yang said to Xiao Rong.

"Use your cultivation base to startle it for a moment. I will take care of it while it's distracted."

Xiao Rong nodded and immediately used her cultivation to pressure the magical beast.

When the magical beast felt Xiao Rong's Ancient Sovereign cultivation base bore down upon it, its body froze with fear.

Whoosh!

The elephant-sized magical beast was sliced in half with ease.

Su Yang took a deep breath afterward, as that single attack had consumed over half of his spiritual energy.

As much as he wanted Xiao Rong to kill every magical beast they encountered, he didn't want her to attract nearby magical beasts with her immense spiritual energy, and his Sword Will was undetectable unless the magical beasts somehow also knew Sword Will.

Thus, he could only use her to distract the magical beasts while he personally kills them.

After killing the magical beast, Su Yang retrieved a pill and consumed it, and his spiritual energy began to restore itself even without needing him to cultivate, as he didn't have the time to sit down and cultivate, not to mention that it was incredibly dangerous to cultivate out in the open in this place.

Chapter 908 - Sword Will

Three days after Su Yang and Xiao Rong emerged from the underground cave, they arrived before a frozen canyon.

"Let's rest here for a bit. I'm exhausted even with the spiritual energy restoring pills..." Su Yang said to her.

He then walked to a seemingly safe and secluded area in the canyon before taking a seat on the cold floor.

"Can I sit there?" Xiao Rong pointed at his l.a.p and asked.

Su Yang nodded.

After getting permission, Xiao Rong proceeded to take a seat on his l.a.p.

Su Yang then stared at the white sky that was snowing lightly.

"Xiao Rong, what do you think of the Divine Heavens so far?" He suddenly asked her.

"I think it's fun. There's a lot of new things, and the environment is also very different compared to the previous world," she said.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang asked her, "Do you still not remember anything about why you were inside the spatial device?"

She shook her head and said, "No, I do not remember anything besides waking up in that place."

"Is that so..."

After resting for about an hour, they stood up and continued their journey to the Frozen Azure Cave.

About two hours later, they stopped moving again.

In the distance, there could see an individual currently engaged in a fierce battle against a magical beast that looked like a large ball of fur and nothing else.

This ball of white fur would bounce on the walls and shoot itself at the cultivator at extreme speeds, and the cultivator would try her best to deflect the attack with her sword.

They continued to fight in this manner until the cultivator got used to the magical beast's movements, allowing her to stab her sword directly at it.

The ball of white fur released a painful cry before falling to the ground without moving.

"Who's there?!" The cultivator turned to point her sword at Su Yang when she suddenly noticed their presence.

Once she saw their appearance and realized that they weren't magical beasts, she lowered her sword and proceeded to ignore them.

"Hey." Su Yang suddenly called out to her.

However, she ignored him and continued walking.

Seeing this, Su Yang retrieved his sword and swung in her direction, sending an arc of Sword Will flying towards her.

"What do you think you're doing?!" The female cultivator turned around to block the attack.

But to her surprise, the Sword Will flew right past her and directly at the ball of fur on the ground.

The seemingly dead magical beast suddenly released another cry when Su Yang's Sword Will sliced it in half.

The cultivator's eyes widened with shock when she saw this.

The magical beast had been playing dead? She even used her spiritual sense to make sure its heart was no longer beating! This was her first time seeing something like this.

"Let's go." Su Yang said to Xiao Rong after finishing off the magical beast, and they continued to fly.

"Wait!" The cultivator suddenly called out to them, even flying after them.

"What is it?" Su Yang turned around and asked her.

"You... Did you just use Sword Will?" she asked him in a dumbfounded voice.

"So what if I did?" Su Yang said.

"Who is your Master?! I also want to learn Sword Will!"

Su Yang raised his eyebrows, and he said, "If you want to learn Sword Will, you should try swinging your sword ten thousand times a day for a whole year."

"Are you making fun of me? As if learning Sword Will is that easy!"

However, she wasn't willing to give up so easily and followed him.

"Haaa... Looks like we have encountered a weirdo..." Su Yang sighed in a low voice before he stopped again.

He then looked at this female cultivator with more attention.

She looked very young, almost like she was around his age, but her cultivation base was much higher than his own being at the Divine Saint Realm, higher than even Qiuyue's cultivation by two entire realms, and there weren't any serious injuries on her body despite training alone in the center areas of Frozen Asgard.

She was also extremely pretty with long black hair tied into a single ponytail behind her head.

One can imagine this young lady was extremely talented but also somewhat inexperienced based on the situation before.

"Don't tell me you came all the way to the Frozen Asgard to learn Sword Will? What's your background?" Su Yang asked her, as he was a little interested in her identity.

"Feng Yan from the Celestial Sword Sect, and yes, I came all the way here to practice my sword," she said in a prideful voice.

"The Celestial Sword Sect?" Although he wasn't familiar with her name, he definitely recognized the Celestial Sword Sect.

'I wonder how that place is doing now...' Su Yang reminisced about his time as a disciple in the Celestial Sword Sect many thousand years ago.

"I told you my identity, now you tell me yours," she then said to him.

"Xiao Yang. I am not affiliated with any sect, so I am what you'd consider as a rogue cultivator."

"What? If you're not affiliated with any sect, how did you learn your Sword Will? I don't believe that you'd manage to learn it by yourself." Feng Yan doubted him.

"Believe what you want. Anyway, I am in a hurry, so I won't stay here to entertain you any longer. If you want to learn Sword Will, go ask somebody else— preferably someone in your sect. There are plenty of people capable of using Sword Will in the Celestial Sword Sect, after all."

However, what came out of Feng Yan's mouth made Su Yang's body freeze.

"What are you talking about? Nobody in the Celestial Sword Sect knows Sword Will. Maybe in the past when it was a top sect and there were plenty of Swordmasters available, but there are no longer any Swordmasters that can use Sword Will in the sect. They're all gone."

"Gone? What do you mean by gone? What happened to the Celestial Sword Sect?" Su Yang asked her with a frown on his face.

Chapter 909 - Celestial Sword Sect

"You don't know what happened to the Celestial Sword Sect?" Feng Yan looked at Su Yang with a surprised expression.

Even the ordinary cultivators from the other Divine Heavens have heard about the incident, yet this fatty who has the capability to use Sword Will isn't aware of the incident that occurred to one of the top sword sects in the Celestial Heaven?

Feng Yan suddenly showed a smile on her face, and she said, "If I tell you what happened, you must tell me how you learned your Sword Will!"

Su Yang nodded without hesitation.

Feng Yan then said, "The Celestial Sword Sect lost to the Limitless Sword Sect in a contest where the winner gets to command the loser to do anything, and the Limitless Sword Sect forced all of the Swordmasters in the Celestial Sword Sect to leave the sect and forbid future Swordmasters from existing in the Celestial Sword Sect again, essentially killing the sect."

"What?" Su Yang was dumbfounded and speechless after hearing about this.

"What about the Sect Master?" he then asked.

"The previous Sect Master had to be replaced by someone who wasn't a Swordmaster."

"The Celestial Sword Sect is still standing even after all of the Swordmasters left? How is that possible?" Su Yang couldn't understand this part.

After all, a sword sect without any Swordmasters is just an ordinary sect.

"That's because even though the Swordmasters are forced to leave the sect, they are still allowed to support the sect individually. Furthermore, the sword techniques in the Celestial Sword Sect were left untouched, so while the sect is no longer the same, there are still many disciples there."

After pondering for a moment, Su Yang then asked, "What happens to the disciples that become Swordmasters?"

"Once a disciple of the Celestial Sword Sect becomes an official Swordmaster, they must leave the sect. However, not all hope is lost, as these new Swordmasters can continue to train under the tutelage of the elders and masters that were forced to leave the sect. They just won't be part of the sect any longer."

"So the previous sect elders are acting as individual Swordmasters, accepting these new Swordmasters as disciples after they leave the sect? Heavens... What on earth is happening to the Celestial Heaven? Everything is a mess..." Su Yang mumbled in a low voice.

"I have told you everything. Now you tell me about your Sword Will! Who is your master?" Feng Yan asked him afterward.

"..."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang said, "Fei Wenxia."

Feng Yan's eyes widened with shock upon hearing the name of the previous Sect Master of the Celestial Sword Sect.

"You're the old Sect Master's disciple?!" Feng Yan exclaimed.

"I used to be— yes." Su Yang confirmed.

"U-Unbelievable... No wonder you know Sword Will!"

"Before I leave, why did the Limitless Sword Sect and the Celestial Sword Sect decide to fight each other? I know they've always disliked each other because of their differences in sword technique, but there's no reason for them to clash against each other like this." Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"Hm? I'm not so sure about the details myself, but according to rumors, it was because the Limitless Sword Sect had insulted a disciple of the Celestial Sword Sect, and this disciple used to be the pride of the sect. I forgot his name, but I think the person's surname was 'Su'..."

The Limitless Sword Sect used him to provoke the Celestial Sword Sect? And the Celestial Sword Sect fought them in response? How should he even react to this?

"Anyway, thank you for the information. I really have to go now." Su Yang said to Feng Yan before flying away with Xiao Rong.

Feng Yan didn't chase after him this time, and she returned to training with the sword.

Once they were alone, Su Yang said, "After Meiqi's death, I tried to fill the hole in my heart by training with the sword—the weapon she loved the most, and that worked temporarily, as I would forget about my loneliness when I absorbed myself in training."

"I joined the Celestial Sword Sect during this time, and in the sect, my sword techniques improved by leaps and bounds. If it were not for the Celestial Sword Sect, I probably wouldn't have reached where I currently am with the sword."

"Fei Wenxia was the Sect Master of the Celestial Sword Sect when I was still a disciple there, and he held the title of Celestial Heaven's Sword Emperor during that time. I cannot believe that someone like him was forced to leave the sect." Su Yang sighed, giving Xiao Rong some of his background and history with the Celestial Sword Sect.

"As for the Limitless Sword Sect, they would always try to convince me to abandon the Celestial Sword Sect to join them, and when I refused, their jealousy for the Celestial Sword Sect would intensify alongside their hate. After all, I was regarded as the most talented Swordmasters during that era, and because of my influence, the Celestial Sword Sect received the title of Number One Sword Sect in the Celestial Heaven, something the Limitless Sword Sect coveted greatly."

"I stopped paying attention to the Celestial Sword Sect and the world of Swordmasters after I left the sect and began my journey as a Dual Cultivator, but I can never forget my debt to them. When I get the chance, I will see if there's anything I can do to help the Celestial Sword Sect return to their former glory."

During the rest of their journey in the canyon, Su Yang would talk about his time as a disciple in the Celestial Sword Sect, and Xiao Rong would listen with great interest. After all, Su Yang normally doesn't talk about his past, and when he does, he wouldn't say more than just a few words.

Chapter 910 - Unknown Terror

At the end of the canyon was a steep mountain pass with a narrow path that only had enough room for one person to walk on at a time, so walking side-by-side was impossible.

"One would think about flying here instead of walking this narrow path, but there's a powerful entity that might rival the Primordial Mammoth living down there, and if you fly over it, there's a good chance that it'll try to consume you." Su Yang said as he pointed at the bottom of the mountain that was so far down that they couldn't see the end.

"I have seen it happen with my very own eyes. It wasn't a pretty sight," he added.

Sometime later, they began walking on this narrow path.

"There are two things we have to worry about when walking on this path. One, a powerful gust of wind that will come at random times, and two, the magical beasts that sometimes fly around this area."

"Though most of the time, the magical beasts that fly in this area are eaten by the unknown terror at the bottom of this mountain, so we really only need to pay attention to the wind that could blow us off the road."

"The good thing is that once we reach the end, there will only be one more place we must pass before we reach the Frozen Azure Cave."

Xiao Rong nodded.

An hour later, Su Yang suddenly stopped walking and said, "Cover yourself with spiritual energy. The wind is coming."

The next moment, a powerful gust of wind that was as powerful as a hurricane started blowing their direction, threatening to knock them off the mountain pass.

The wind was so strong that one could see large chunks of ice the size of large boulders being carried by the wind and flying past them before disappearing into the distance.

The wind lasted for ten minutes without any breaks until it suddenly stopped, disappearing as quickly as it appeared.

"Let's go." Su Yang said a moment later once he was certain that the wind would not be returning anytime soon.

However, about half an hour later, the wind returned again, forcing them to stop.

On the second day, shortly after experiencing their 3rd wind for that day, Su Yang suddenly stopped.

Xiao Rong subconsciously covered herself in spiritual energy when Su Yang stopped walking, but he said a second later, "This time it's a magical beast. Don't move and suppress your presence."

Xiao Rong immediately retracted her spiritual energy and suppressed her presence until even Su Yang could not sense her despite standing a few inches in front of her.

'As expected of a Phantom Cat... Their ability to hide their presence is too heaven-defying...' Su Yang sighed inwardly, admiring her heaven-sent talent.

A few moments later, a massive bird-like creature the size of multiple large restaurants could be seen flying in their direction in the distance.

And surprisingly, this magical beast emitted an Ancient Realm aura.

However, before this flying magical beast could even get near them, something extremely long and flexible suddenly emerged from the bottom of the mountain like a spear, piercing straight through the flying magical beast's body.

Once this spear-like thing pierced the magical beast's body, it wrapped itself around the magical beast before dragging it into the depths of the mountain pass, disappearing almost instantly.

Xiao Rong swallowed nervously when she witnessed the scene. How can an Ancient Realm magical beast like her die so easily? It didn't even have a chance to fight back whatever that thing was!

"What was that thing just now?" she couldn't help but ask him afterward.

"That was the tongue of the entity that lives at the bottom," he said.

"Nobody really knows what lies at the bottom. Some people have gone down to investigate, but they never returned."

"Do you understand why we cannot fly here now?"

Xiao Rong quickly nodded her head.

"Alright, let's continue moving. It will take us another two days before we can reach the end at this rate."

Su Yang and Xiao Rong encountered another magical beast flying through the area a few hours later, and it had an even more powerful aura compared to the last one, but it also suffered the same fate as the previous magical beast.

Two days later, they finally reached the end of the mountain pass without any troubles. But because they had to constantly take breaks to defend against the wind, it felt much longer than 2 days for them.

After the mountain pass was a vast mountain valley that only went one way.

Su Yang lifted his arm and pointed at the horizon and said, "At the end of this mountain valley is the Frozen Azure Cave. However, crossing this mountain valley will be extremely dangerous, as there are no hidden passages that we can use to hide."

"Thus, we can only traverse in the open and try our best to avoid as many magical beasts as we can."

"And just like the mountain pass, we cannot fly in this place since we will be in plain sight, not to mention the many aerial magical beasts in this area."

"We still have about two weeks left until the meeting, but this place is the longest and largest area in the Frozen Asgard because this is the very center, so it might require the entire two weeks to traverse this place."

Su Yang said, then he retrieved the black pouch he'd acquired from his old home before tying it right beside his waist, allowing for quick and convenient access just in case anything happens.

"Are you ready?" Su Yang asked Xiao Rong.

She nodded.

"Then let's go."

The two of them then jumped off the edge of the mountain pass and straight into the mountain valley, before slowly making their way towards the Frozen Azure Cave at the end of this valley.

The moment they landed on the ground, they noticed thick red mist that resembled clouds covering the ground that appeared to be coming from the direction of their destination.

Su Yang frowned when he saw this red mist that flowed like a river, and he mumbled, "What is this red mist? This isn't natural. I have never seen anything like this in the Frozen Asgard before, and I have been to this place multiple times."

Chapter 911 - Devil Blood Mist

When he saw this red mist, Su Yang took a quick sniff of it.

"T-This is!"

Su Yang's eyes widened with shock.

Upon realizing what it was, he immediately retrieved some ingredients from his storage ring before concocting a couple of pills right on the spot.

Xiao Rong watched with interest.

A minute later, Su Yang handed half of the pills to Xiao Rong and said to her, "Quickly, eat it."

He then followed his own advice and swallowed the pills.

After she consumed the pills, Xiao Rong asked him, "Master, what is happening? What is this red mist?"

"This red mist is called Devil Blood Mist; it's a poisonous gas that's released by a certain magical beast known as the Red-Faced Lizard. However, that shouldn't be possible, as Red-Faced Lizards cannot handle the cold and are usually only found in the hotter parts of the world."

"And what I just had you consume were poison resistance pills. Fortunately for us, the Devil Blood Mist isn't very powerful if we deal with it quickly and can be repelled by even ordinary poisonous pills. After all, it's only used by the Red-Faced Lizard to weaken its prey that is usually other magical beasts, but it covers a large area."

Su Yang then looked at the depths of the mountain valley with a frown.

'Why is there a Red-Faced Lizard in the Frozen Asgard, the coldest area in the Celestial Heaven? Did it consume a treasure in this place and somehow mutate?' He wondered inwardly.

'However, if that was the case, how did the Red-Faced Lizard get here in the first place? I doubt it came here naturally...'

Su Yang suspected that someone had placed a Red-Faced Lizard in this area for whatever reason, as that was the most logical reason he could think of. As for the reason behind such actions, he cannot even begin to imagine.

"Anyways, even if there's a Red-Faced Lizard in here, it won't stop us from reaching the Frozen Azure Cave. We just need to be extra careful, as Red-Faced Lizards are usually at the peak of the Ancient Realm..."

"Peak of the Ancient Realm..." Xiao Rong repeated in a low voice.

If they encounter this Red-Faced Lizard, the chances of her being able to protect Su Yang were practically zero.

Of course, Su Yang was well aware of this, but he never expected Xiao Rong to protect him, as he has his own methods to deal with the Red-Faced Lizard if they truly encounter it.

"Let me concoct a few more pills. We'll need to consume one every hour to protect ourselves from the poison." Su Yang said, before spending a few minutes concocting over a hundred pills.

Once he was done, he handed half of them to Xiao Rong and said, "Now let's conceal our presence again."

They then started walking into the wilderness.

However, they were walking at an extremely slow pace, as Su Yang wanted to make sure there were no magical beasts around them before he continued further.

Furthermore, even if he spots a magical beast, there was a good chance that they'd spot him as well.

About an hour later, they stopped walking when Su Yang sensed a powerful presence a few miles in the distance.

"It feels like the Divine Emperor Realm..." Su Yang mumbled in a low voice.

Since he was only at the Sovereign Spirit Realm, he could only guess the magical beasts' prowess that was far above his own, making it impossible for him to see their full strength.

However, since he has plenty of experience, he could guess their cultivation bases just by their aura.

Of course, if a magical beast knows how to conceal its presence or suppress its cultivation base, then it would be pretty disastrous for them.

As for Xiao Rong, who was at the Ancient Sovereign Realm, she also couldn't tell their cultivation bases, as she has zero experience when it comes to the power scale in the Divine Heavens.

This meant that despite having a much higher cultivation base than Su Yang, she wouldn't be any more useful when it comes to assessing others' prowess.

Once he spotted the magical beast, Su Yang stopped moving until he could no longer sense the presence, and then he would alter their direction a little bit to completely avoid the magical beast.

They continued to move like this for the entire day, and they managed to avoid over a dozen magical beasts like this.

"Fortunately, there are fewer magical beasts now than before. This is probably due to the Blood Devil Mist, as the only way for the magical beasts to avoid it is to leave the area."

Despite the poison being incredibly weak for a magical beast as powerful as the Red-Faced Lizard, the Blood Devil Mist can ignore one's spiritual energy just like the blizzard surrounding the Frozen Asgard, making it impossible to defend against it.

Xiao Rong subconsciously stopped her movement when Su Yang stopped. After following him for the last two months, she had grown used to moving and stopping very frequently.

Meanwhile, Su Yang used a special surveillance technique to spy on the magical beast ahead, purposefully avoiding the usage of spiritual sense, as the magical beasts would easily notice him looking at them with spiritual sense due to his weak cultivation base.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang suddenly turned around and said in a somewhat panicked voice, "Quickly, follow me!"

He then began running in the opposite direction.

Xiao Rong was surprised at first since this was their first time needing to run backward.

After running for about an hour, Su Yang finally stopped and sighed, "That was close. That magical beast almost noticed us."

"Almost? So it didn't notice us?" Xiao Rong raised her eyebrows.

Why did they run if it didn't notice them? Wouldn't their movements attract it instead?

Su Yang shook his head and said, "You don't understand. The magical beast from before was different from the rest. It has extremely sharp senses, and it even has an ability that's similar to spiritual sense, and it used it to look at its surroundings. If we didn't leave just now, it would've spotted us."

"Anyways, we can no longer go that direction. Follow me."

They continued moving shortly later.

Chapter 912 - She Will Definitely Come

Another week has passed since Su Yang and Xiao Rong began traversing the mountain valley, giving them one more week to reach the Frozen Azure Cave.

However, they were not even close to reaching their destination, only managing to traverse a fourth of it.

"Looks like we're really going to be late if we continue at this pace..." Su Yang sighed.

As much as he wanted to just take out his flying treasure and speed through the mountain valley, he didn't have a death wish.

After pondering for a moment, Su Yang said, "Alright, Xiao Rong, we're going to speed up. It may be risky, but if we don't reach the Frozen Azure Cave and Ziyi leaves, our entire journey here would become pointless."

Xiao Rong then asked him, "Master, why are you so certain that she will be at the Frozen Azure Cave? What if this person is not there?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "That's not possible. If she heard the message I told Mu Yuechan, she will definitely come. After all, that's the same words I told her when we paired up to acquire the Azure Lotus thousands of years ago."

"As for Mu Yuechan, I know her well enough. If she says that she will do something, she will do it, so I don't have to worry about her not conveying the message to Ziyi. Of course, Mu Yuechan could delay telling her the message, but I hope that isn't the case."

"In any case, I have no doubt that she will be there once we arrive." Su Yang said.

Xiao Rong nodded.

"Then make sure you follow along. I am going to speed up a lot now."

After taking a deep breath, Su Yang began using the movement technique Nine Astral Steps, moving many miles with a single step.

Of course, since he sped up his movement, he also had to increase his alert even more.

A few minutes later, the instant Su Yang notices a presence, he would instantly change directions and go another route without even taking the time to see what kind of magical beast it was— if it was even a magical beast in the first place.

However, with that being said, there are eccentric and unfathomable people out there who would come to the center of the Frozen Azgard to train and look for treasures, so there may be a couple of people in the mountain valley right now.

A few hours later, Su Yang stopped to rest.

Although he could move without stopping for many days if he was just using the Nine Astral Steps, his surveillance technique was very taxing on his mind and spiritual energy, so he could only move continuously for a single day like this.

As for why he stopped only after just a few hours despite having enough energy for the whole day, it was simply because he didn't want to exhaust all of his spiritual energy just in case he needed it to deal with any unexpected encounters.

After an hour of resting, they started moving again.

The next day, after an entire week of no incidents, Su Yang and Xiao Rong finally encountered their first magical beast after failing to notice it because it had suppressed its presence.

"Divine Sword!"

The moment Su Yang realized that they had been noticed by a magical beast, he immediately used his strongest sword technique, Divine Sword.

However, unlike when he fought against Patriarch Gold, the Divine Sword didn't have any extravagant appearances and remained the size of a normal sword, as he didn't want to attract the nearby magical beasts while fighting this one.

The white bear released a deafening roar when it was struck by the Divine Sword that constantly drained its strength.

It then turned to look at Su Yang before running at him, acting as though there wasn't a sword in its body.

"Xiao Rong!"

Su Yang called out to her.

Xiao Rong, who had been standing behind him, used her spiritual energy to suppress the magical beast even further by attacking it mentally.

Su Yang then used Nine Astral Steps to approach the white bear without getting too close to it.

Once he was behind the magical beast, he pointed his finger at the white bear before sending out a single strand of Sword Will that pierced the white bear's head from behind, instantly killing it.

"Let's get out of here before other magical beasts arrive!"

After killing the magical beast, Su Yang immediately used Nine Astral Steps to leave the scene without even bothering to check the corpse, and Xiao Rong followed him.

After another hour of running without rest, Su Yang finally stopped and began panting heavily.

It'd taken him nearly all of his spiritual energy just to take care of the magical beast that appeared to be around the Divine Saint Realm. If that single strike didn't kill the magical beast, they would've been in trouble.

"Keep watch for me, Xiao Rong. I am going to recover my spiritual energy," he said to her before taking a seat and absorbing the spiritual energy around them as quickly as possible.

Half an hour later, before Su Yang could recover his spiritual energy fully, Xiao Rong called out to him, "Master!"

Su Yang's eyes immediately snapped open. Once he determined the location of the presence in half a second, he wasted no time using Nine Astral Steps, disappearing from his location in less than a second.

Chapter 913 - Frozen Azure Cave

"Divine Sword!"

Su Yang tossed the small sword emitting an otherworldly aura at the magical beast ahead, stabbing it directly between its eyes.

The magical beast released a painful cry that was loud enough to shake the trees and ground.

"Xiao Rong!" Su Yang called out to her.

Xiao Rong then used her spiritual energy to strike the magical beast's mind, halting its movement for a split second. During that split second, Su Yang used the majority of his spiritual energy to create a powerful Sword Will that could kill the magical beast in a single strike.

After killing the magical beast, they immediately ran away from the area that would soon become a battlefield for other magical beasts fighting over the corpse.

They would repeat this process every time they encountered a magical beast, and although it was extremely exhausting for Su Yang, he continued to endure it, as they were so close to reaching the Frozen Azure Cave. Furthermore, whenever he thought about meeting Luo Ziyi again, he would gain some energy back and continue pushing further.

Of course, there were encounters with magical beasts that were even stronger than Xiao Rong.

When this happened, they could only run away and pray to the heavens that they don't get caught by the magical beast.

Fortunately for them, the magical beasts they could only run away from were powerful but slow entities— slow enough for Su Yang and Xiao Rong to escape unscathed.

Their movement techniques were major contributors as well, as Su Yang's Nine Astral Steps was one of the best movement techniques in the Four Divine Heavens while Xiao Rong was naturally quick on her feet.

Their journey continued for a few more days until it was the time of the meeting.

However, they were still not at the Frozen Azure Cave.

They were close, but they weren't there just yet, and it'd take them another two days to reach the area if they continued to move at their current pace.

"Master..." Xiao Rong looked at him, who was sitting on the ground and cultivating.

"I know, we're late. But we're not too far away, and I really need to recover some of my spiritual energy. If we continue at my current state, I won't have enough spiritual energy to kill the next magical beast if we run into one."

"We may be late, but Ziyi won't immediately leave because we're late. She's a patient woman. That's why I picked her out of everyone available at the sect, as I was afraid that we wouldn't make it in time." Su Yang said.

Xiao Rong nodded.

A few hours later, once Su Yang recovered the majority of his spiritual energy, they continued to move again.

As they got closer to the Frozen Azure Cave, Su Yang noticed that the Devil Blood Mist was getting stronger and thicker.

It was near transparent at first, but the mist is now so incredibly thick that he could no longer see the ground.

Seeing this, Su Yang said, "Xiao Rong, let's slow down."

As much as he wanted to continue moving at the same pace, he truly didn't want to encounter the Red-Faced Lizard.

"The Red-Faced Lizard is not only powerful but it has a special ability that can spit out poisonous saliva that travels as fast as a flying treasure and nearly impossible to dodge, and unlike the mist it releases, its saliva is incredibly poisonous and could instantly kill us if it even touches it."

"The only way to defend against such an ability is to cover yourself in spiritual energy that it cannot penetrate. However, neither of us are powerful enough to block it with our spiritual energy, so we can only avoid it."

Xiao Rong nodded, and they slowed down.

Su Yang lifted his arm and pointed at the peak of the mountain that was at the end of the mountain valley.

"The Frozen Azure Cave is at the peak of this mountain." Su Yang said.

However, there was one problem. The mountain itself was incredibly tall and reached the heavens, and there didn't seem to be any paths that they could walk to go to the top, leaving them with only one option.

"In order to get up there, we'll need to fly, but that might attract the aerial magical beasts around us. I can even sense three of them flying around us as I speak. They'll definitely notice us and attack us before we can reach the entrance if we just fly up there."

"Even if we manage to get up there, the Frozen Azure Cave is large enough to host magical beasts inside, but we probably don't have to worry about that, since Ziyi should've taken care of them if she's inside."

"Actually, now that I think about it, it should be fine even if we attract the magical beasts. As long as we reach the Frozen Azure Cave, Ziyi will take care of them for us." Su Yang then came to this realization.

Su Yang then took a deep breath and said, "Are you ready for this, Xiao Rong?"

She nodded.

Su Yang retrieved the marble that could teleport them if something goes wrong and held it in his grasp so that they could teleport to safety in an instant.

'Oh, Ziyi, I really hope you're in there...' Su Yang sighed inwardly as he started flying toward the peak of the mountain.

Of course, the magical beasts flying in the sky noticed Su Yang and Xiao Rong flying in the sky.

The instant they noticed the two of them, they began flying in their direction.

Although the magical beasts were hundreds of miles away, they closed the distance within minutes.

'Che!'

Su Yang knew that they wouldn't make it to the Frozen Azure Cave before the magical beasts reached them, and they were too powerful for him or Xiao Rong to handle, so he used his other hand that wasn't holding the marble and reached for the black pouch hanging by his waist, retrieving a yellow talisman a moment later.

Chapter 914 - Inside the Frozen Azure Cave

The yellow talisman emitted a profound and ancient aura when it appeared in the world, causing the magical beasts that were flying at them to slow down greatly, as their instincts warned them to not get close.

In fact, two of the three magical beasts turned around and flew away a moment later.

However, one of them decided to remain and continue to chase down Su Yang and Xiao Rong, its eyes flickering with killing intent that could suffocate even a Divine Spirit Realm cultivator.

"So you decide to choose death, huh? Then die for me!"

Su Yang activated the talisman by pouring his spiritual energy into the talisman when he realized that the last magical beast wasn't going to leave them alone.

The talisman immediately began emitting a gentle golden glow.

"Sword Talisman!" Su Yang tossed the talisman at the incoming magical beast.

Whoosh!

Although the magical beast couldn't sense the Sword Will, it could sense that something incredibly powerful and dangerous was heading its way, so it immediately turned around and began running away.

However, the Sword Will caught up to the magical beast almost instantly, tearing its massive body to shreds just as fast.

Xiao Rong was speechless when she saw this, and she asked him, "Master, what was that just now? I could sense a familiar feeling from that talisman just now."

"Because the Sword Will released by the Sword Talisman is actually my own Sword Will. Well, at least Sword Will from my previous self," he explained to her why she was having that feeling.

"When I was still an active Swordmaster, I'd create these talismans using my Sword Will for emergencies and would sometimes even sell them when I needed money. They're incredibly powerful and can kill even an Ancient Realm cultivator. However, they were also incredibly taxing to create, and they could only be used once, so I didn't make too many of them."

"Let's speed up. Hopefully, there won't be any more magical beasts since I only have a few more of these talismans."

An hour later, they finally arrived at the peak of the mountain, where a massive cave entrance could be seen.

"We've finally made it. The Frozen Azure Cave..." Su Yang released a huge sigh of relief upon seeing the entrance.

"Let's go inside." Su Yang then said, feeling a little impatient after finally reaching this point.

After walking for a few miles on a dim path that was somewhat illuminated by the glowing walls that would grow brighter as they went deeper, they have finally arrived at the end of the Frozen Azure Cave, a spacious and fully illuminated area with a pond in the middle.

Su Yang walked to the glowing pond and looked around the place, but Luo Ziyi was nowhere to be seen.

'She's not here?' Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

Perhaps she was also running a little late like him? Or maybe she left already?

Su Yang was more willing to believe that Luo Ziyi was running late instead of the latter reasoning.

"Xiao Rong, let's—"

Before Su Yang could even finish his sentence, his body froze when a dreadful aura suddenly filled the place.

'T-This presence... Impossible! What's that thing doing here?!'

Su Yang turned to look at the other side of the room, where a large black lizard with black scales and a red symbol that resembled a face on its back was staring at them.

"Master... is that...?" Xiao Rong's body trembled with fear when she saw the menacing entity at the back of the room.

"Don't move! That is the Red-Faced Lizard! Any sudden movements and it will attack," he said to her using spiritual sense.

'F.u.c.k! What is this beast doing here?! How did it get inside the Frozen Azure Cave! Don't tell me it climbed all the way up here?!' Su Yang cursed inwardly, as he initially believed that the Red-Faced Lizard was inside the mountain valley.

'There's no way we can defeat that thing even with my Sword Talisman! If Ziyi was here, that Red-Faced Lizard wouldn't be here! What should I do? Should I just give up on meeting her now and run away with Xiao Rong using the teleport treasure?'

Su Yang didn't want to give up after reaching the end, but there was truly no good solution to this mess besides running away with Xiao Rong.

Although he had plenty of treasures inside his black pouch that could deal with the Red-Faced Lizard, he didn't dare to reach for it, as the Red-Faced Lizard would kill him before he could even take any of his treasures out, much less use them. Therefore, he could only resort to using the marble that was already in his grasp.

All he needed to do was crush the marble and teleport away.

Su Yang tightened his jaw in anger.

As much as he wanted to ponder some more, he didn't dare to risk it.

Even worse, he noticed some minor movements by the Red-Faced Lizard mouth. It was clearly preparing to attack them with its unavoidable poison spit.

Su Yang gave up when he saw this. 'Damn it! How dare you interrupt my long-awaited reunion with Ziyi! I will definitely return to this place and skin you alive once I am strong enough!'

However, just as Su Yang began tightening his fists and the Red-Faced Lizard opened its mouth, a tyrannical pressure came out of nowhere, instantly flattening the Red-Faced Lizard into meat paste.

Su Yang's movement froze when he felt this pressure, and his body subconsciously turned around to look at the only entrance that was also an exit for the Frozen Azure Cave.

"Ziyi..." Su Yang mumbled in a low voice when he saw a breathtakingly beautiful goddess standing by the entrance with a calm look on her ethereal face, and she was wearing a black uniform that he didn't recognize.

Chapter 915 - Reunion After 2,000 Years

"Ziyi..." Su Yang felt an urge to cry after seeing Luo Ziyi's beautiful face for the first time in years.

Even though it has been technically 2,000 years, Su Yang has only experienced a small fraction of that, as he'd reincarnated only 20 years ago.

Of course, while it has only been a few years for Su Yang, it has been over 2,000 since Luo Ziyi has seen him.

After killing the Red-Faced Lizard with almost no effort at all, Luo Yizi slowly approached them in small steps, and she spoke in a calm voice, "I will see you at the Frozen Azure Cave in three months when the Azure Lotus blooms."

"Tell me, why did you tell Mu Yuechan to convey this message to me? And how did you know about it? That was what my late husband told me when I told him that I needed the Azure Lotus." Luo Ziyi stopped walking a few steps before him.

"You also knew an awful lot about Mu Yuechan while she knew nothing about you. Tell me, who are you?"

"..."

Su Yang didn't immediately answer her, and he looked around the Frozen Azure Cave instead, looking like he was searching for something.

Seeing this, Luo Ziyi snapped her fingers, instantly creating a powerful formation that covered the entire mountain.

"I have concealed this entire place. Nobody will be able to hear us unless I allow them— not even heaven itself."

Su Yang then smiled and said, "What do you think? Who do you think I am?"

Luo Ziyi narrowed her eyes, and a powerful pressure suddenly enveloped Su Yang, threatening to flatten him just like she did to the Red-Faced Lizard.

Although it didn't injure him, Luo Ziyi could do so with a single thought.

Su Yang started laughing at her reaction, and then he said, "You haven't changed at all, Ziyi. Go ahead. Kill me if you dare."

Luo Ziyi's body visibly trembled after hearing his words.

The pressure disappeared the next moment, and she spoke in a shaky voice, her calmness from a moment ago nowhere to be seen, "Is it really you?"

Su Yang then retrieved a white pill and consumed it.

A few seconds later, his round figure began slimming down, and his height even grew taller.

In just a few seconds, the fatty before Luo Ziyi had completely disappeared, turning into an incredibly handsome young man with unfathomable charm.

"I know I look a little bit younger than what you're used to, but yes, I am indeed Su—"

Before he could even finish his sentence, Luo Ziyi stepped forward with her arms spread wide open, tossing herself at him.

"Su Yang! You're really alive!" she embraced him tightly with the corner of her eyes overflowing with tears.

Su Yang also embraced her.

Feeling the nostalgic warmth of her body, he finally felt like he was home.

Even though he has been in the Divine Heavens for a couple of months by now, it didn't feel like he'd gone home— at least not until he reunites with his family.

After spending the next hour simply hugging each other in silence, Su Yang finally said, "Alright, Ziyi. As much as I want to continue this, we have a lot to talk about."

"Indeed, we do. I have so many questions for you."

"What a coincidence," he said with a smile.

He then continued, "Go ahead. Ask me. I will answer your questions first."

Luo Ziyi wiped her eyes and nodded.

She then asked him, "How? How are you alive? I... We all saw your corpse when the Heavenly Emperor handed you back to us. And where have you been for the past couple of thousand years?"

Su Yang then retrieved a mattress from his storage ring before placing it on the ground.

"Take a seat. This is going to take a while," he said.

Seeing him take out a mattress, Luo Ziyi smiled and said, "You're definitely Su Yang, no doubt about it..."

Once they were both seated, Su Yang turned to look at Xiao Rong and patted the space beside him, "You can sit here as well."

Xiao Rong nodded and sat beside him in an obedient manner.

Although she tried her best to avoid looking at Luo Ziyi, Xiao Rong would glance at Luo Ziyi every once in a while, as she was attracted by the unfathomable aura surrounding Luo Ziyi's graceful figure.

Sometime later, Su Yang began explaining to Luo Ziyi what had occurred when he was still trapped inside the Eternal Retribution Cliff and how he met this mysterious old man.

He then talked about how he got reincarnated to another world that was not part of the Four Divine Heavens.

"So after you met this old man, you suddenly woke up in the body of another person, but that person turned out to be your reincarnation? Just who is this old man that can force someone to reincarnate? Even the Heavenly Emperor doesn't have such capability... I think..." Luo Ziyi wondered out loud.

"Yes, and I have been trying to get back here since I woke up in that world. I managed to return to the Four Divine Heavens much quicker than I'd expected since I wasn't expecting to return for at least a few more decades if not a few hundred years."

"Anyways, now let me tell you about my experience there."

Su Yang proceeded to lay on the mattress with Luo Ziyi lying beside him, and they both stared at the cave ceiling that was glistening like the starry sky, almost like they were stargazing.

Once they were comfortable, Su Yang began recalling his entire experience in that new world from the moment he woke up in his new body until the moment he stepped through the mirror and returned to the Four Divine Heavens.

Luo Ziyi didn't utter a single word until Su Yang was finished with his story, her hand gently clasped onto Su Yang's hands this entire time.

Chapter 916 - Reactivating Luo Ziyi's Family Seal

"And that's how I returned to the Four Divine Heavens." Su Yang ended his story after talking for four hours straight.

"..."

"Well? What do you think?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"I... I am speechless..." Luo Ziyi said in a dazed voice.

Luo Ziyi found many shocking things in Su Yang's experience, but the most shocking detail of all was that he'd actually managed to find over a dozen women to join the family in just four short years when he'd normally only come back home every few hundred years with a single new addition!

Of course, Su Yang had skipped some 'minor' details in his story, such as impregnating a few of these women, as he wanted to surprise her with them later.

"Sister Lingxi... So she knew that you were alive this entire time but didn't say a single word to us despite returning to her original body for so long? I don't even know if I should be mad that she kept it to herself or happy that I got to learn about it for myself, making our reunion that much more emotional and better."

Su Yang smiled and said, "She was never the type to communicate with everyone else."

"What are your plans now that you have returned, Su Yang?" she then asked him.

"I heard from Mu Yuechan that everyone has scattered after my death. I plan on reuniting everyone. However, in order to do that, I must recover my original strength. If I try to do anything with my current cultivation base, I will die before I can do anything."

"I see..."

"With that being said, do you know where the others are? I only know about your sect and everyone inside. Mu Yuechan told me that most of them had returned to their own homes, but that's the extent of my knowledge."

"I know the location of some, but I do not know where everyone is," she said.

"Although we would send letters to each other at first, we eventually stopped and continued on with our life."

"Is that so... Looks like it will take a while to reunite with everyone." Su Yang sighed.

"If you want, you can always reveal to the world that you're still alive. Once word spreads, they will eventually come back on their own," said Luo Ziyi.

"As much as I want to let the world know that I am back, I am still far too weak, and there are plenty of people who would do everything in their power to get rid of me once and for all. Furthermore, even if I can seek protection from you ladies, chances are my enemies will find me first before everyone else."

"Also... As far as I can tell, you ladies are living in peace right now even without me. I don't want to ruin this peaceful time by revealing my presence."

"So do you intend on keeping the others in the dark?" Luo Ziyi asked him.

"I don't know if I will be able to keep this to myself, especially when I am in front of the other sisters. We may be living a peaceful life right now, but we're all silently grieving inside— we have been ever since your 'death'."

"Of course, many of us believe that you are still alive since our Family Seal is still on our body. The other sisters are definitely waiting for you to come back."

"Speaking of the Family Seal... Can I see it?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

Luo Ziyi nodded and proceeded to loosen her clothes, revealing her perfect body alongside the Family Seal that was located on the right side of her waist. However, the Family Seal was deactivated, lacking the golden color.

"Can you try activating it again?" Luo Ziyi asked him a moment later.

He nodded and smeared some of his blood onto the Family Seal.

Luo Ziyi could immediately feel her body heating up.

A moment later, the deactivated Family Seal began turning golden.

"Alas... After two thousand years, the Family Seal has finally activated again..." Luo Ziyi looked at the golden symbol with a loving gaze.

Once the Family Seal on Luo Ziyi activated, Su Yang could feel his connection with her return.

"Su Yang."

Hearing Luo Ziyi's sweet voice, he turned to look at her.

The moment he turned his head, Luo Ziyi grabbed his head before pulling it toward her face.

"Mmm..."

Luo Ziyi began kissing him passionately.

Su Yang closed his eyes and fully indulged himself in it.

The two of them continued to kiss each other passionately for almost an entire hour straight.

Once they stopped, Luo Ziyi took a moment to breathe before loosening her clothes fully, and she stared at him with a passionate gaze, her intentions clear.

"Su Yang... I want to feel your love even more..."

Su Yang didn't hesitate and immediately removed his clothes, ignoring the cold temperature there.

"Even though you reincarnated, your body appears to be the same..." Luo Ziyi chuckled when she saw the massive dragon between his legs. "But will it feel the same?"

"Let's find out." Su Yang did not immediately insert his rod into her cave and took a moment to c.a.r.e.s.s her beautiful pink slit with his rod instead.

Once it was soaking wet, Su Yang inserted his rod into Luo Ziyi's tight and warm immortal cave that hasn't been touched for at least two thousand years.

The moment his rod reached the end of her cave, Su Yang could feel her inner walls tightening around his rod.

This sensation provided an indescribable feeling of p.l.e.a.s.u.r.e that Su Yang hasn't experienced ever since he reincarnated.

It was a heavenly feeling that made him lose his mind for a brief moment.

"Mmm~!" Luo Ziyi m.o.a.n.e.d in a soft voice.

"This is it— this is the feeling I have been longing for!"

Chapter 917 - Does This Make Me the First?

"Mmm~!"

"Aaaa~!"

The Frozen Azure Cave echoed with Luo Ziyi's blissful voice and the sound of Su Yang's rod pounding her meat.

"Is it just me, or did you get even better?" Luo Ziyi asked him while he continued drilling her body.

"Really? I don't know." Su Yang said with a smile.

Luo Ziyi then held out her arms in front of her and said, "Hold me, Su Yang."

He nodded and released her waist before grabbing her hand.

Once their fingers were locked, Su Yang moved his h.i.p.s even faster.

"Mmm~!"

Luo Ziyi's immortal cave gushed with Yin Qi, but Su Yang didn't dare to absorb these Yin Qi, as his cultivation base was far too lacking. Therefore, he could only treat this as casual s.e.x instead of dual cultivation.

The two of them continued to cultivate with each other for an entire week while Xiao Rong watched them with a somewhat envious gaze.

Su Yang has only ever used his sword to pierce her rear end, and she wondered how it would feel in the front.

This curious and envious feeling only got stronger as she watched Luo Ziyi display extreme bliss and satisfaction.

After a week of straight s.e.x and without releasing his Yang Qi once, Su Yang asked her, "Ziyi... I know you have asked me before... to i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e you. Do you still want my children? If so, I will i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e you right now."

"Eh?" Luo Ziyi stopped m.o.a.ning to stare at him with a shocked expression on her face.

"W-What did you just say? I don't think I heard you properly..." Luo Ziyi said, doubting her ears.

"I said... Do you still want my children? You asked me before, remember?"

"O-Of course, I remember..." she nodded.

And she continued, "I also remember how you'd adamantly refuse my request— as well as the others."

Su Yang smiled and said, "Well, I have changed. I am willing to i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e you— all of you now."

"R-Really? You're not messing with me?"

"Yes," he nodded to confirm.

"Do you want to bear my child, Ziyi?" Su Yang asked her again.

"I do!" She responded immediately this time.

"Then here it comes!" Su Yang then released his Yang Qi, and an entire week's worth of Yang Qi gushed into Luo Ziyi's immortal cave.

The Yang Qi quickly overflowed her cave.

Su Yang unplugged his rod from her body a moment later.

"Let me clean it for you." Luo Ziyi then licked his rod clean with her mouth.

Despite cultivating with Su Yang for an entire week straight, Luo Ziyi clearly had plenty of energy left.

As much as she wanted to continue cultivating with him, they will have to continue this another day when their environment is more suitable for dual cultivation. Furthermore, there were still a lot of things they needed to talk about."

"Su Yang, does this make me the first person to bear your child?" Luo Ziyi asked him sometime after they wore their clothes again.

"Well..." Su Yang showed her a smile with a deep meaning behind it.

"What? Don't tell me I'm not? Then who's the first one? How come I haven't heard about it?"

"Probably because it happened when I was in another world," he said.

Luo Ziyi's eyes widened with shock, and her jaw dropped, leaving her mouth wide open.

"Y-You i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed one of the new sisters?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "It's not just one, either. I have 5 children right now with four different women."

"Heavens..." Luo Ziyi was left speechless by this revelation.

"Do you want to meet them? It should be safe now with the concealment formation around us." Su Yang then said to her.

"Yes!" she quickly responded.

"Alright."

Su Yang then retrieved the spatial device and opened the Immortal's Treasure.

Sometime later, he went inside with Luo Ziyi and Xiao Rong.

Upon entering the Immortal's Treasury, Su Yang teleported them directly to the second floor where the others were living.

Of course, Su Yang had notified them before they entered the spatial device, so everybody living inside the Immortal's Treasury was already gathered and waiting for their arrival.

"Su Yang!"

The ladies there immediately smiled when they saw Su Yang's handsome face again.

Although they hear his voice pretty often, this was their first time seeing him in person since they arrived at the Four Divine Heavens three months ago.

"Wow, what a beautiful lady..." Sun Jingjing subconsciously mumbled when she saw Luo Ziyi.

While they knew Su Yang wanted to introduce them to someone, they didn't know who exactly, but when they saw Luo Ziyi, they immediately knew her relationship with Su Yang, especially when they felt the Family Seal's on their body reacting to her.

"It's been a while, ladies. Let me introduce you to Luo Ziyi. If you can't tell by now, she's a member of the Su Family from the Four Divine Heavens." Su Yang said to them.

"Hello..." Luo Ziyi said to them with a calm expression on her face, yet she was greatly shocked inwardly when she saw four beautiful women carrying babies in their arms.

'Are they all... Su Yang's children?' Luo Ziyi felt an indescribable feeling in her heart when she saw these babies.

"Hi! My name is Sun Jingjing, and I used to be a fellow disciple of Su Yang!" Sun Jingjing was the first to introduce herself.

Once Sun Jingjing finished her introduction, the next person went, and they would continue this until everyone there had introduced themselves.

However, Luo Ziyi was barely paying attention to their introductions, as she was completely focused on the babies.

When Xie Xingfang noticed Luo Ziyi staring at the babies, she spoke with a smile on her face, "Senior sister, would you like to carry one of them?"

"Eh?" Luo Ziyi snapped out of her daze and looked at her face for the first time.

"I noticed you were staring at them, so I thought you might've wanted to take a closer look. If I'm wrong, I apologize—"

"No, you're right. I'd like to hold them for a moment if you don't mind." Luo Ziyi quickly interrupted with a somewhat bashful look on her face.

The smile on Su Yang's face grew wider when he saw this, and he laughed inwardly at Luo Ziyi's unusual reaction to the babies.

Chapter 918 - Su Yang's Plans

After Xie Xingfang handed Su Tianying over to Luo Ziyi, Luo Ziyi proceeded to carry the baby in her arms with an inexplicable feeling in her heart.

Su Tianying, Su Yang's son, stared at Luo Ziyi in silence as she carried him.

Sometime later, Su Yang said, "Ziyi, I need you to do me a favor."

"What is it?"

"Can you take care of them while I am away?"

Luo Ziyi turned to look at him and said, "What do you mean?"

"I want you to let them stay at your sect for now. I will be traversing the Four Divine Heavens to improve my cultivation, and it would be inappropriate for me to carry them around with me everywhere, especially with my plans."

"If I die... I don't want them to die with me."

Everybody there looked at him in silence.

"Don't say such obnoxious things. I won't forgive you if you 'die' again." Luo Ziyi said with a frown on her face.

"I know, but I will be able to travel with reassurance knowing that they're in your care."

After a moment of silence, Luo Ziyi turned to look at the ladies and asked them, "Are you girls okay with his decision?"

The ladies exchanged glances with each other.

Lian Li then said, "Just make sure to visit us once in a while, okay?"

"That's right! At least once a year!" Su Yin said.

Su Yang showed a bitter smile on his face, and he said, "Unfortunately, I may not be able to visit any of you for at least a few years."

"What? Why not?" Su Liqing quickly asked.

"Because the place you ladies will be going to is called the Sacred Lands— it's a special place in the Celestial Heaven where men are barred from entering unless they receive permission from the Sacred Empress."

"Although I have permission to enter the Sacred Land, that permission is for 'Su Yang', and I cannot reveal my identity for now, as that would only bring trouble for everyone."

The ladies were clearly not happy to learn that they'll have to separate from him and most likely not see him again for a few years, but they understood that Su Yang had many important things to do, and they were warned even before they arrived at the Four Divine Heavens that things will change.

"Stay safe, Su Yang." They said to him afterward.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Of course. I won't die so easily."

And he continued while looking at Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua, "I will try my best to meet with the God of Alchemy, and when I do, I will let her know about you two. Until then, just stay with the others."

"Okay." They nodded.

"And since it might be a while until we will meet again, allow me to spend the rest of the month with you all. Do you mind, Ziyi?" Su Yang asked her.

She shook her head and said, "I was supposed to have a meeting with the Sacred Empress, but I skipped it, so I have plenty of time now."

Thus, Su Yang proceeded to spend the rest of the month cultivating with everyone inside the Immortal's Treasury without any breaks— at least with those who are able to cultivate.

A month later, Su Yang said his goodbyes with the ladies inside the Immortal's Treasury before leaving the place and returning to the surface in the Frozen Azure Cave with Xiao Rong and Luo Ziyi.

Of course, before they left, Su Yang handed the spatial device's authority to Luo Ziyi so that she could carry it with her back to the Sacred Lands.

"You have some really lovely girls in there, Su Yang. I'm sure the others will also welcome their new sisters." Luo Ziyi said to him once outside, as she had plenty of opportunities to speak with the new family members during their month of entertainment.

After taking the spatial device with her, Luo Ziyi asked him, "Well, what are your plans now?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "I am going to Martial Heaven to join the Boundless Yin Yang Sect so that I can improve my cultivation."

"The Boundless Yin Yang Sect?" Luo Ziyi raised her eyebrows.

Although it wasn't shocking and quite reasonable considering his situation, it was definitely surprising, as she never expected to see Su Yang become a disciple again.

"Are you going to go in your other appearance? The Boundless Yin Yang Sect will chase you away before you can even enter their sect gates." Luo Ziyi said to him.

Su Yang laughed out loud and said, "Ziyi, you dare underestimate me? But you're right. As much as I want to challenge myself by cultivating in the Boundless Yin Yang Sect in that appearance, I don't have the luxury to play around. I will go with a new appearance— one that isn't as obnoxious."

"However, before I go to the Martial Heavens..."

He paused to clear his throat before continuing, "I will need some more help from you."

Luo Ziyi smiled and said, "How much do you need?"

"In fact, let me take you to Martial Heaven."

Su Yang raised his eyebrows and said, "That won't do. You will attract too much attention, the opposite of what I want."

"You think you're the only one who can use disguises? I can do that as well, and I have even better pills than what you were using. Although it's not easily noticeable, if someone really focuses on you, they will see right through your disguise."

"So you knew since the beginning but still decided to question me?" Su Yang chuckled.

"Not only that, but I have even been secretly watching you ever since you entered the mountain valley." Luo Ziyi said with a big smile on her face, revealing to him that she'd actually been watching him this entire time.

"What?! Is that why you were late?! And you didn't even bother to help me? I even used one of my precious Sword Talisman!" Su Yang was shocked to learn that Luo Ziyi had been following him for the last two weeks.

"Because it was very entertaining watching you struggle in such a manner, Su Yang. You don't get to see such scenes very often, after all." Luo Ziyi laughed in a graceful manner, leaving Su Yang speechless.

Chapter 919 - Leaving the Frozen Azure Cave

"Unbelievable. To think you'd let your husband suffer for your own entertainment... What if I died?" Su Yang said to her in a joking manner.

Luo Ziyi continued to smile and said, "You think I'd let you die in my presence?"

"No, but hypothetically speaking, I could've died."

"And I am telling you that's not possible."

Su Yang shook his head with a defeated smile, and he said, "Anyways, jokes aside. Since you're going to be coming with me, I will alter my plans a little. Let's go visit the God of Alchemy first. This will be much easier with you by my side."

"The God of Alchemy?" Luo Ziyi raised her eyebrows.

"Yes, is there something wrong? I heard that she'd stopped concocting pills for some reason, but I need her to make me some pills."

"Well... She left her sect about a thousand years ago and hasn't returned. Nobody knows where she went, either."

Su Yang frowned upon hearing this, but he didn't panic.

After pondering for a moment, he said, "I think I have an idea of her location."

"Really?"

He nodded and explained, "Yes, she took me to this isolated place when she first started teaching me alchemy. That's the only place I can think of."

"Where is this place?" Luo Ziyi then asked.

"To be completely honest with you, I also have no idea where this place is— but that is not to say I don't know how to get there. It's just that I don't know where the place is located exactly. I have tried looking for it before, but I couldn't find anything. It's probably her own little dimension or something along that line."

"Okay. But before we go, I will need to return to the sect to retrieve some money since I didn't expect to be traveling with you when I left." Luo Ziyi said a moment later.

"Okay. I will wait for you at the Frozen Palace. You know where it is, right?"

"Yes."

"Also, if you're going to drop the others off, you can leave everyone but Bai Lihua and Wang Shuren behind, since they'll be coming with us to meet the God of Alchemy."

"Do you plan on making them her disciple?" she asked him.

He nodded.

"I understand."

"By the way, one more thing... Should I tell the others about you...? You never gave me an answer," she suddenly asked.

Su Yang silently stared at her as he pondered in silence.

A moment later, he nodded, "You can tell them, but make sure to do it within a concealment formation. Even though I am certain that nobody will leak this information, you never know when someone else is listening."

"I know, Su Yang. Who do you think you're talking to?" Luo Ziyi said with a smile.

"Then I will see you at the Frozen Palace in a few days."

Sometime later, Su Yang consumed the Supreme Appearance Altering Pill and returned to being a fatty.

"I thought you were going to change appearances?" Luo Ziyi raised her eyebrows when she saw this.

"I will change it when I go to the Boundless Yin Yang Sect. I will remain in this appearance for now since I kind of got used to it," he said.

"Are you ready to leave?" Su Yang asked her.

"Wait a moment." Luo Ziyi turned around and walked to the pond there.

Su Yang followed her and stood beside her.

"Do you remember when we worked together to acquire the Azure Lotus?" Luo Ziyi asked him after a minute of silence.

"Of course. How could I forget? The Azure Lotus that lives at the bottom of this pond and fifty thousand other cultivators trying to obtain it. However, with you by my side, it wasn't too much work."

"More like with you by my side. I was the one who needed the Azure Lotus. You were there just to help me." Luo Ziyi said with a smile.

After another moment of silence, she spoke, "Hey, Su Yang."

"What is it?"

"Let's come here again in four thousand years— just me and you. That's when the next Azure Lotus is born."

"Sure." Su Yang nodded.

After spending a few more minutes staring at the pond, Luo Ziyi removed the concealment formation around the Frozen Azure Cave.

She then left the cave with Su Yang and Xiao Rong following right behind her.

Once they were outside, they proceeded to fly over the mountain valley without a care in the world.

Of course, the magical beasts in the air immediately noticed their presence and decided to attack them.

However, before they could even get close, Luo Ziyi only needed to release some of her cultivation base to flatten the magical beasts instantly.

Eventually, the other magical beasts stopped trying to attack them, and they managed to leave the mountain valley in just a few hours.

Xiao Rong was speechless when she saw how effortlessly Luo Ziyi was killing the magical beasts that they had to avoid and run away from for the past two weeks, and they even crossed the mountain valley in such a short time.

Once they arrived at the mountain pass that had the unknown entity at the bottom, Luo Ziyi said to them, "Stay close to me."

She then retrieved a treasure that completely erased their presence, allowing them to fly over the mountain pass without alerting the entity at the bottom.

"Master, will it be okay?" she asked him.

He nodded, "Yes. You don't have to worry about it. The entity at the bottom won't notice us if we stay close to Ziyi, who has a treasure that will conceal our presence perfectly. Furthermore, even if it does spot us, she can defend it just fine."

Xiao Rong felt relieved after hearing his words, but when they actually started flying over the mountain pass, she still felt some nervousness from it.

Chapter 920 - Leaving Frozen Asgard

A few hours after leaving the mountain valley, Su Yang and the others also managed to leave the mountain pass safely.

And since they had Luo Ziyi protecting them, there wasn't any need for them to use the hidden passages, allowing them to just fly straight through the Frozen Asgard effortlessly, almost like the Frozen Asgard had turned into a park for them.

"I have been wondering for a while now, but who is this little girl? I can tell that she's also disguised, but she doesn't have a Family Seal on her." Luo Ziyi as they made their way out of the Frozen Asgard.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Take a guess."

When he told her about his experience in the other world, he purposefully left out details about Xiao Rong to surprise her.

Luo Ziyi looked at Xiao Rong with a pondering look on her face.

After a moment of silence, she spoke, "She's not human, so she's likely a magical beast. I find her aura a little familiar, but I cannot recall where I have sensed it before or what kind of magical beast she is."

"Here's a few hints. She is small, has incredible spiritual strength, and can even find treasures with ease. Ah, she's also extremely fast."

"She can find treasures?" Luo Ziyi raised her eyebrows.

There were only a handful of magical beasts with such a unique ability in the Four Divine Heavens, and most of them are small. However, there is only one that is both fast and has strong spiritual strength."

"Don't tell me she's a Ghost Cat?" Luo Ziyi made an educated guess.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Close, but not quite."

"What? What else besides Ghost Cats are fast, can find treasures, and even have strong spiritual strength, which is their specialty?"

"What about a Phantom Cat?"

"Phantom Cat?! The ancestor of Ghost Cats?! How did you come across such a ridiculously rare ancient beast?!" she exclaimed.

"Do you remember the spatial device I gave you? I found her inside," he said.

"What? You found a Phantom Cat inside a spatial device? How is that even remotely possible? I don't believe you!"

"Let me tell you about it first. I kept it out on purpose to surprise you."

Su Yang proceeded to tell her about his experience inside the spatial device and how he found Xiao Rong.

"Unbelievable... To think someone from the Heavenly Order ended up in that world after their war with the Asura God Clan. But that doesn't explain why there's a Phantom Cat inside that person's spatial device." Luo Ziyi said after hearing the story.

"I can only think of one possibility. Xiao Rong somehow entered the spatial device and got stuck inside. Although Phantom Cats and Ghost Cats can be born from nothing, it is highly unlikely that there was enough spiritual energy inside the spatial device to give birth to a Ghost Cat, much less a Phantom Cat."

"Why don't you ask her?"

"I have, but she doesn't remember anything."

"Is that so... Then maybe you can take her to you-know-who and have her check out Xiao Rong." Luo Ziyi suggested.

Su Yang smiled and said, "I already have plans to take Xiao Rong to her."

"Who?" Xiao Rong asked out of curiosity.

"Let's just say that she's an expert with Ghost Cats and the likes," he said.

"You'll know when you see her."

Xiao Rong nodded.

A week later, they left the Frozen Asgard and arrived at the nearest city.

"I will see you later, Su— Xiao Yang." Luo Ziyi said to him.

"Yes. See you in a few days."

Su Yang then went to the Frozen Palace with Xiao Rong while Luo Ziyi went to the teleport formation.

"G-Greetings, Immortal Fairy Luo!"

Everybody greeted her.

The people waiting in line also greeted her before they made a path for her, allowing her to go first.

"Take me to the Sacred City," she said.

"Right away!"

The workers immediately started working on the teleport formation.

A few minutes later, they were finished.

Luo Ziyi then paid the fees before entering the teleport formation.

Upon exiting the teleport formation on the other side, Luo Ziyi retrieved her flying treasure and started making her way to the other teleport formation— the one that will take her to the Sacred Lands.

"Welcome back, Immortal Fairy Luo." They said to her.

Luo Ziyi didn't say anything and entered the portal sometime later, arriving at the Sacred Lands.

At the Sacred Lands, Luo Ziyi used her flying treasure again and quickly returned to her sect.

"Welcome back, Sect Master." The disciples there greeted her.

"I'm back."

Luo Ziyi then returned to her own living quarters before taking out her communication jade slip and summoning everyone from the Su Family within the sect— even those that were not at the sect.

The first to show up was Wang Yunxuan.

"Sister Ziyi, welcome back." Wang Yunxuan said to her.

"I'm back," she responded with a smile.

Despite trying to keep a poker face to not reveal anything to her until everyone gathered, Luo Ziyi couldn't help but smile when she saw Wang Yunxuan, as she could only imagine her reaction once she reveals the news to her and everyone else.

"You seem to be in a good mood. Are you willing to tell me what the message was all about now?" Wang Yunxuan asked her.

"Just be patient, Sister Yunxuan. This is something that all of you should experience together."

"Everyone? You summoned the other sisters as well? This must be fairly important."

Luo Ziyi nodded.

"Now I am really curious..." Wang Yunxuan smiled.

Three days later, 12 women— 12 extremely beautiful goddesses gathered in Luo Ziyi's living quarters.

Chapter 921 12 Goddesses

"What's going on, Sister Ziyi? Did something happen?" One of the 12 goddesses asked her once they gathered in her living quarters.

"This must be fairly urgent if you had to summon all twelve of us at once. Are we under attack again?" said another goddess.

Luo Ziyi shook her head and said, "No, we're not under attack, but this is definitely important— more important than anything that has happened for the last 2 thousand years."

Luo Ziyi then used her spiritual sense to make sure there was nobody spying on them, and then she used a concealment formation, covering not just the entire living quarters but also the entire sect as well.

This dumbfounded the goddesses. They have never seen her acting so secretive.

Once she was prepared, Luo Ziyi took a deep breath and spoke, "Fellow sisters, I only have one question for all of you..."

She looked at them with a solemn expression on her face.

"Do you believe in Su Yang?"

"What?"

The goddesses' eyes widened with surprise after hearing her question.

"What do you mean by that, Sister Ziyi? We need more context..." One of them said to her after a moment of silence.

"When Su Yang died two thousand years ago, some of us believed that he was still alive while others hoped he's still alive. Do you all still believe— or hope that he's alive?"

Everyone there had a complicated and pained expression on their faces when Luo Ziyi reminded them of Su Yang's death.

After a minute of silence, one of them said, "I believed that Su Yang was still alive at first, but two thousand years have passed. If he was alive, he'd have returned to our side by now. As much as I want to keep on believing in him... I have to face reality. He's no longer with us."

"What's two thousand years? I had to wait 5,000 years for him at one point," said another goddess there.

The goddesses there began to give their thoughts on the subject.

Wang Yunxuan then asked afterward, "What's the matter, Sister Ziyi? Why are you asking us this? You usually hate it whenever we mention Su Yang."

"Right? You would even scold us for it. Now you're the one bringing it up? Something happened, right?"

Luo Ziyi nodded, and to the others' surprise, she stood up and began loosening her clothes.

"What are you doing?" They asked her.

Once she loosened her robes enough, Luo Ziyi allowed them to fall onto the ground, revealing her beautiful figure.

"What are you trying to tell us—"

The place suddenly turned dead silent.

After a moment of silence, Wang Yunxuan pointed at the right side of her waist with a trembling hand.

"S-S-Sister Ziyi... T-That... H-H-How...?!?!" she spoke in a shaky voice.

"Your Family Seal is active?! Impossible!" Another one exclaimed.

The goddess began approaching Luo Ziyi to look at her Family Seal more closely.

"I-It's really active! How?!"

Luo Ziyi showed a smile on her face as she wore her clothes again.

Then she said, "Why don't you take a guess? There's only one way someone can activate their Family Seal."

"Y-You're telling me that Su Yang activated it— that he's alive?" Wang Yunxuan asked her with a look of disbelief on her face.

The smile on Luo Ziyi's face grew wider, and she nodded.

"..."

The entire room turned dead silent with everyone trying to process whatever was going on.

Once they realized the situation, tears began flowing from their eyes.

"W-Where is he right now?! I want to see him!" One of them suddenly said.

"How?! What happened to him?!" Another one asked.

The goddesses began bombarding Luo Ziyi with questions regarding Su Yang.

"Calm down. I will explain everything to you in just a moment. But first, I want you all to look at this, since I'm sure that some of you are still doubting it."

Luo Ziyi proceeded to take out an item and showed it to the goddesses.

When they saw the items, their eyes widened with shock, and all of their doubt vanished.

The item in Luo Ziyi was a sword— an ordinary and somewhat worn-out sword that had two names engraved onto it.

"Su Yang."

"Su Meiqi."

"Su Yang actually gave you his sword? Normally, he wouldn't let it even leave his hands!" Wang Yunxuan was shocked.

"Yes, I was also surprised when he handed it to me before we separated."

"So you really met him? Where?"

"Allow me to explain," said Luo Ziyi.

And she proceeded to explain everything that happened, starting from when she received the message from Mu Yuechan.

"I will see you at the Frozen Azure Cave in three months when the Azure Lotus blooms. That was the message Su Yang told Mu Yuechan to convey to me. This sentence is significant because it was the exact same sentence he said to me when we worked together to acquire the Azure Lotus."

"Thus, I immediately went to the Frozen Asgard after hearing this message."

"Fast forward two months, I noticed a fatty and a young lady traversing the mountain valley. I watched them in secrecy, and to my surprise, the fatty was using Sword Will and the Nine Astral Steps, something Su Yang knew. Then I saw him use a Sword Talisman that released Su Yang's Sword Will. It was at this moment that I was almost certain that he was Su Yang, but I wasn't 100 percent certain— until we finally met up in the Frozen Azure Cave."

"Inside the Frozen Azure Cave, the fatty removed his disguise, turning into Su Yang... at least a younger version of him. After that, he explained everything to me. What had happened in the Eternal Retribution Cliff. Where he has been for the past 2,000 years among other things."

"After listening to his story, I finally understood why our Family Seal didn't entirely disappear, only deactivated, and I also understood why he hasn't returned until now."

"Don't skip the important details, Sister Ziyi! Tell us what happened to him!" One of the goddesses urged, acting like an anxious child during storytime when the story was reaching the climax.

Chapter 922 Learning the Truth

"I'm getting there..." Luo Ziyi said with a smile.

And she continued, "Anyways, the reason Su Yang 'died' was because he'd been forced to reincarnate when he met some mysterious old man inside the Eternal Retribution Cliff, and he reincarnated 2,000 years in the future in some unknown world outside the Four Divine Heavens."

"What? He reincarnated?"

The goddesses were speechless after hearing this.

Luo Ziyi nodded and proceeded to recall to the goddesses everything Su Yang told her— all of his experience within the unknown world until the moment he returned to the Four Divine Heavens.

"Unbelievable... To think something like this could happen..."

They all held an expression of disbelief on their beautiful faces.

Sometime later, Wang Yunxuan said, "Sister Ziyi, I feel like you're still hiding something from us."

Luo Ziyi chuckled and asked her, "What makes you say that?"

"It's just a feeling."

"You're right, there's still one— actually, two things I haven't revealed yet."

"One, Su Yang brought with him from the other world more sisters."

The goddesses raised their eyebrows. They have more sisters in the family now? That wasn't too surprising, though.

"And it's just more than one or two. There were like a dozen of them, and all in just a few years."

"What?! There's a dozen of them?!"

The goddesses were shocked now.

While they were used to Su Yang bringing back a new woman every time he would return, he would usually only return with one every few hundred years— two at times.

However, bringing back a dozen new women in just a few years was incredibly shocking and unprecedented.

Of course, it has been over 2,000 years for them, but for Su Yang, only a couple of years have passed since he reincarnated.

"What are they like?" One of them asked Luo Ziyi.

"They're all really young. Less than a hundred years old, which isn't surprising considering the world he was in. They are mostly mortals in that world and the Sovereign Spirit Realm is considered the peak."

"Heavens... I don't even know what to make of that... How long has it been since we have mortals joining our family?"

"A bunch of new junior sisters, huh? At last, I will no longer be the youngest here..."

Luo Ziyi nodded and said, "I will introduce them later."

"As for the second thing... Su Yang has agreed to impregnate me," she said with a blissful smile on her face.

"What?!"

The goddesses exclaimed simultaneously.

"In fact, he's already filled my body with his Yang Qi. I will be pregnant soon."

"P-Pregnant?! Impossible! He has always been against that!" One of them then said.

"I know it's shocking. Trust me, I was also shocked when he asked me to have his child even though I have always wanted it. However, I am not lying. In fact, he already has 5 children with the new sisters. They're all really cute babies. I even held one of them in my arms— his son. "

"What?! Su Yang has babies now?!"

Out of all the shocking news they have heard today, this was definitely at the top.

"Quickly! Let me see the new junior sisters! I cannot wait any longer!" One of them suddenly urged.

"Do you want to see the sisters or the babies?" Luo Ziyi chuckled.

"Follow me. We'll have to go somewhere with more room."

"Also, we are not to talk about this subject unless you are absolutely sure that there's nobody around and that you're within a concealment formation."

Luo Ziyi reminded them before she removed the concealment formation and led them to another place— one that was much more spacious.

Sometime later, Luo Ziyi created another concealment formation before retrieving the spatial device and opening the Immortal's Treasury.

Minutes later, they arrived at the 2nd floor where the others were living.

"Wow... There's way more than a dozen people here..." The goddesses were speechless when they saw how many people were living in this place.

"Hello, fellow sisters. Allow me to introduce you to the Su Family of the Lonely Fairies' Refined Palace." Luo Ziyi said to the Su Family from the mortal world.

The goddesses then proceeded to introduce themselves.

After that, Su Liqing and the others introduced themselves.

"A-Are those really Su Yang's children?" Wang Yunxuan asked them in a trembling voice after their introduction.

"Yes. Do you want to hold onto her?" Lian Li nodded.

"Please!"

Lian Li then handed Su Li'er to Wang Yunxuan.

When the other mothers saw this, they also handed their children to the other goddesses.

"You know, when we asked Su Yang to impregnate us before, he would always refuse. It's quite shocking that I have his children in my arms right now." One of them said.

"Yes, he told us about it before. He said it was mostly because he had too many enemies, and he didn't want unnecessary trouble." Sun Jingjing said.

"Indeed, he does have a lot of enemies..." The goddesses agreed.

The ladies proceeded to talk to each other about Su Yang.

A few hours later, Luo Ziyi said to them, "As you already know, all of you will be staying at the Lonely Fairies' Refined Palace for now. If you wish to continue living in this place, that is completely fine, but I suggest you live outside with us, where the quality of spiritual energy is countless times better."

"Su Yang also told me to assist in your cultivation. Although you may have been experts in your previous world, in the Four Divine Heavens, your cultivation bases are incredibly weak, almost nonexistent. Therefore, the Lonely Fairies' Refined Palace will train you into powerful cultivators."

"Most of you are in the Heavenly Spirit Realm and below for now, but I promise you that within ten years, you will all reach at least Divine Realm."

"Until you're powerful enough, you will have to stay inside the sect, meaning you cannot leave the sect for whatever reason, as this is for your own safety."

Luo Ziyi then turned to look at Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua and continued, "As for you two, who intend on learning alchemy from the God of Alchemy, you will be coming with me. Su Yang has decided to change his plans and visit the God of Alchemy first."

"I understand." They both nodded.

Chapter 923 Above the Seven Mortal Spirit Realms

"Are there any questions?" Luo Ziyi asked them afterward.

Xie Xingfang raised her hand and said, "Senior Sister Luo, you said that we'll be able to achieve Divine Realm within 10 years, but how far ahead is that compared to the Heavenly Spirit Realm?"

"Ah, right. You're only familiar with the Sovereign Spirit Realm since that is the peak in your world."

"Well, as you already know, above the Heavenly Spirit Realm is the Sovereign Spirit Realm, and above that is the Divine Spirit Realm."

"The Divine Spirit Realm is the end of the first major realm, the Seven Mortal Spirit Realms. As long as you're within one of these stages, you're still considered as a mortal."

"The next major realm is the Five Divine Realms. Starting with Divine Origin Realm, then Divine Lord Realm, Divine Sovereign Realm, Divine Saint Realm, and lastly, Divine Emperor Realm. The Five Divine Realms is often considered as the most important since that is when you start to truly experience what it's like to be a cultivator."

"Above the Five Divine Realms is the Four Ancient Realms. Ancient Sovereign, Ancient Saint, Ancient Emperor, and lastly, Ancient Immortal. Here, you'll be considered an Immortal if you reach Ancient Emperor."

"After breaking through Ancient Immortal, you'll enter the Immortal Ascension Realm. The Immortal Ascension Realm consists of nine levels, such as First Level Immortal Ascension and Second Level Immortal Ascension."

"After attaining all nine levels, you will be able to attempt to enter the Three Celestial Realms— Celestial King, Celestial Emperor, and Celestial God. However, the Three Celestial Realms are special in the way that only those who have Celestial Qi in their Dantian can achieve. Without it, no matter how powerful or talented, you will not be able to reach this realm, so Immortal Ascension is considered as the peak for most people in the Four Divine Heavens."

"Do you understand the power balance in the Four Divine Heavens a little better now?"

"Wow... There are so many cultivation levels... To think Su Yang wasn't exaggerating when he called us mere mortals..."

The ladies from the mortal world were left speechless by the overwhelming amount of cultivation levels above the Sovereign Spirit Realm. Many of them believed that the Heavenly Spirit Realm was the peak of cultivation at one point. To think they were not even considered as true cultivators in this vast world; it was simply too shocking.

"Anyways, we will teach you more about the cultivation levels and our world later. First, you should prioritize getting used to the sect. Also, we won't force you to become disciples if you don't want to, but you will all be disciples in name in order to protect you. If you decide to join us, just let one of us know and we'll make it happen. Although the Lonely Fairies' Refined Palace is a sect to most people, it's really just a home for the family."

"One more thing. Once you leave this space, don't talk about Su Yang or even mention him, as there could always be someone listening and you won't even know it. The fact that he's still alive has to remain a secret for now to keep all of you— and even us safe. If you want to talk about him, I will keep this spatial device open in a secluded area so that you ladies can enter whenever."

The ladies nodded.

Luo Ziyi then turned to look at the mothers and said, "I know it will be difficult for you to focus on cultivation with a baby in your hand, so one of us will take them off your hands when you need to cultivate. Do you mind?"

The mothers shook their heads.

"Great." Luo Ziyi then looked at the 12 goddesses and smiled, "As for whoever gets to take care of the babies... We can take turns."

They nodded with excitement in their eyes.

"Then I will give you some time to prepare. I will also take this time to prepare your new living quarters in the sect alongside other things. Tomorrow, we will figure out who will be teaching who."

After talking for a little longer, Luo Ziyi and the others left the Immortal's Treasury.

"This is very exciting. I wonder what it's like outside. I cannot wait." Sun Jingjing said afterward.

"It sucks that we won't be able to see Su Yang for a while, but if we focus on our cultivation, I'm sure we'll meet him before we even realize how much time has passed." Zhu Mengyi said.

Meanwhile, after leaving the Immortal's Treasury, Luo Ziyi returned to her living quarters with the others.

"It's been a very long time since I have felt this kind of excitement. Not only do we now have new sisters but we also get to live with Su Yang's descendants," said one of the goddesses there.

"Sister Ziyi, where's Su Yang right now? You never told us. I want to meet him."

"Me, too!"

"Calm down, sisters. As much as I want to let you all see Su Yang, it'll attract unnecessary attention if you all visit him at once."

"That's fine. We can disguise ourselves, and we won't all go at once."

"It isn't fair that you're the only one who gets to see Su Yang, Sister Ziyi."

The goddesses began complaining to her.

"Fine, fine, but let me speak with Su Yang first. I will let you all know his answer when I come back," said Luo Ziyi.

"When will you be back?" One of them asked.

"I don't know. But it shouldn't take too long. A few weeks at most, probably," she said.

"In the meantime, I will leave the junior sisters to you. Of course, if you're busy with other things, I completely understand, as this was quite sudden."

"Nonsense! There is nothing more important than taking care of Su Yang's descendants!" One of them said.

"Although we can take turns taking care of the babies, who will go first? And how long do we get to spend with the babies before we have to switch?" Another one asked.

Luo Ziyi smiled and said, "You ladies can figure that out by yourselves. I have to return to Su Yang's side now."

"You're leaving already?"

"Well, not immediately. I still need to prepare for our trip, but tomorrow should be my last day at the sect."

"Okay. Stay safe. And make sure you speak with Su Yang regarding letting us meet him!"

"I know." She nodded.

Chapter 924 Sparring Each Other

Sometime later, Luo Ziyi went to prepare for her journey with Su Yang while the other goddesses began debating on who should be the first person to take care of the babies and how long they get to take care of the babies.

"As the most senior one here, I should be first in line to take care of the babies!"

"That's not fair, Senior Sister Zou! The one with the most experience with children should go first!"

"How do we know who has more experience? One can even lie about their experience! We need something more definitive!"

"Then let's settle this the traditional way."

The goddesses looked at each other before nodding in silence.

They proceeded to make their way to a certain area in the sect— a massive arena with multiple stages available there, and many disciples could be seen fighting on these stages.

"Greetings, Senior Sisters!"

The disciples there stopped whatever they were doing to greet them, and even the ones fighting on the stages stopped fighting to greet them.

They were then greatly shocked when they saw all twelve Sect Elders gathered at the same time, as that only normally happens during important events and celebrations within the sect.

This is the first time they have seen so many sect elders in the arena at once.

"Don't mind us. You girls can act like we're not here." Wang Yunxuan said to them.

Despite nodding their heads, the disciples knew that it was going to be an impossible task to ignore their presence, especially when there's so many of them.

The twelve of them proceeded to stand there in silence, patiently waiting for an available stage.

About half an hour later, there was finally an open stage.

When the goddesses saw this, they immediately jumped onto the stage, attracting the disciples' attention again.

"The rules are simple. We will limit our cultivation base to the Divine Origin Realm. If your strength exceeds the Divine Origin Realm, it will be an automatic loss. If you get kicked off the stage, it will also result in a loss." Wang Yunxuan said to the others.

"We will decide the matches through the lottery, and we will treat this as a tournament." Wang Yunxuan then retrieved a box with a hole on the top.

"Pick your numbers. Those with the same numbers will be fighting each other."

The goddesses proceeded to pick their number.

Once they all had their number, those that picked number one remained on the stage while the others left the stage and stood by the stage as spectators.

"A-Are the Senior Sisters going to spar with each other? Why? I have never seen them fight before..."

"I don't know, but this is very exciting. I wonder what it looks like when the sect elders fight..."

The disciples also gathered around the stage and became spectators.

Sometime later, once they were ready, the two goddesses on the stage started to fight.

Boom!

The ground immediately started shaking when they began exchanging techniques and attacks with each other.

"Wow..."

The disciples were both shocked and terrified when they started fighting in a manner that looked as though they were really trying to kill each other.

Although there was a formation around the entire arena that prevented one from dying even if their head explodes as long as they remained inside the formation, it was still shocking to see the sect elders going at each other's throats in such a vicious manner.

"S-Senior sisters... If you don't mind me asking, why are you all fighting with each other? Is this some sort of practice?" One of the disciples there decided to ask them.

"No, this is not for practice. We're trying to decide on something, but we couldn't come to an agreement, so we decided to use this method to come to a conclusion, as this is the most straightforward method we can think of— the strongest will get to decide."

"I-I see..."

Although the disciples understood why they were doing this, none of them dared to ask what they were fighting for.

"Take this!"

"That won't be enough to defeat me, Senior Sister!"

After clashing for half an hour, one of them emerged victorious when she literally made the other's body explode into a bloody mess, splattering her blood and organs all over the stage.

The disciples sucked in cold air when they saw this.

However, a moment later, the goddess that had been killed returned back to life as though nothing had happened, and the bloody mess on the stage also cleaned up itself.

"Not bad, Junior Sister... You have improved tremendously since our last spar."

Sometime later, the ones who got number 2 went onto the stage.

Once the winner was decided, the winner from the first fight and the winner from the second fight began fighting on another stage while the losers also fought each other, almost like a real tournament.

The disciples remained in the arena to watch them fight, refusing to leave, as it was incredibly rare to witness the sect elders display their skills, and they were even able to learn from watching the fight.

Eventually, other disciples in the sect also began appearing in the arena when they heard about the situation.

The goddesses fought each other for the entire day until the following morning when they had to return to the Immortal's Treasury to assist the junior sisters.

"We'll finish this later." Wang Yunxuan said to them.

Sometime later, they gathered at the Immortal's Treasury.

"Good morning, Senior Sisters."

"Morning, Junior Sisters."

After their greetings, Luo Ziyi brought them outside the Immortal's Treasury, leaving only Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua behind.

"I will be leaving the sect now. Take care of the junior sisters while I am away," Luo Ziyi said to them.

"Do you even need to tell us that? We'll take care of them even without your reminder."

"Have fun with Su Yang, Sister Ziyi."

"Don't forget to ask him about letting us meet him!"

Luo Ziyi nodded.

She then swallowed a pill that transformed her appearance before leaving the sect with the Immortal's Treasury.

Chapter 925 Their Mentors

Once Luo Ziyi left the sect, the goddesses said, "Before we show you your new living quarters, we should figure out who will be taking care of who."

"That should be easy." One of them said, and then she continued, "Which of you here mainly uses the sword?"

Lian Li then raised her hand and said, "I mainly use the sword."

"Me too." Wu Jingjing also said.

"Good. Then I will be your mentor starting today. Once again, my name is Qian Yun'er. Nice to meet you."

"We will be in your care, Sister Qian."

A moment later, another goddess stepped forward and said, "My name is Mei Lingling, and I am an expert with medicine and pills. Junior Sister Liqing, Junior Sister Mengyi, I can smell the aroma of medicine on you two. Want to follow me?"

Zhu Mengyi and Su Liqing nodded their heads.

"By the way, I'm curious, why aren't you following the other two to meet the God of Alchemy? She's definitely much better when it comes to medicine." Mei Lingling asked them.

"Well... I study medicine, but it's not really my main path. I am actually a dual cultivator... And I don't know how to concoct pills." Su Liqing said.

"I see... That's fine. Even if you aren't an alchemy master, I can still teach you. And to tell you the truth, none of us are actually dual cultivators. We only started dual cultivation because of Su Yang. However, we can still teach you about dual cultivation with our experience."

Zhu Mengyi then said, "I wanted to study under the God of Alchemy at one point, but after giving birth to Zhu Jiayi, I decided to give up and focus on taking care of her."

"Maybe in the future, once Zhu Jiayi is all grown up and more dependent, I will seek the God of Alchemy for tutelage."

"That's a respectable choice as well. I may not be as good as the God of Alchemy when it comes to medicine, but I am still one of the top Alchemy Masters in the Four Divine Heavens. I will prepare you for the day you decide to study under the God of Alchemy."

"Okay. Thank you, Senior Sister Mei."

A moment later, another goddess stepped forward.

"Any normal cultivators amongst your group? I'm Yu Ning. I don't really specialize in anything besides cultivation."

Hearing her words, Su Yin, Zhang Xiu Ying, Fang Xiaoru, and Xie Xingfang stepped forward.

"Great. Then you'll be in my care. I will do my best to help you all become powerful cultivators."

"Please take care of us, Senior Sister Yu." They bowed to her.

"My name is Xing Aiyang, and I am a master of formations and illusions. Does anyone here want to learn formations?"

Li Xiao Mo quickly stepped forward and bowed to her, "I would like to study under you, Senior Sister Xing."

"Okay."

"I have the most experience when it comes to dual cultivation among us sisters. Who are dual cultivators here? My name is Ji Xiaofan."

Sun Jingjing, Fang Zhelan, and Qi Yue stepped forward.

"You're also a dual cultivator?" Ji Xiaofan looked at Qi Yue with raised eyebrows, as she looked too young to be one.

"I haven't experienced dual cultivation yet, but I have been studying it ever since I was young. I also intend on becoming a dual cultivator," Qi Yue said.

"Alright. I will teach you every dual cultivation technique that a woman must know, especially if you wish to satisfy Su Yang. He's not easily satisfied, after all." Ji Xiaofan smiled.

"Of course, if the others want to learn them as well, you're free to study with us as well."

By now, only four people were left that didn't have anyone assigned to them.

Yan Yan, Hong Yu'er, Qiuyue, and Qin Liangyu.

A moment later, someone stepped forward and looked at Qin Liangyu and asked her, "Are you interested in Body Refining? I can tell from your physique that you have trained your body before."

Qin Liangyu nodded and said, "I used to train my body when I was still in my tribe since we're required to hunt spiritual beasts to survive, and we didn't really have any proper cultivation techniques."

"Then would you like to study under me? I can make your body reflect to even powerful treasures but also keep its softness and slender figure, but it won't be easy."

"I will be in your care, Senior Sister." Qin Liangyu nodded.

"Jia Jinghua is my name," she said afterward.

Now it was just Hong Yu'er, Qiuyue, and Yan Yan left.

"I am planning to serve under Sister Tang in the future," Hong Yu'er suddenly said to them.

"Sister Lingxi? You want to serve her?" The goddesses were surprised to hear this.

They thought she was one of Su Yang's women this entire time.

Hong Yu'er nodded.

"Oh, you must be the one that occupied Sister Lingxi's soul." Wang Yunxuan said.

"Want to study under me in the meantime? I'm the most familiar with Sister Lingxi out of everyone here, so I can teach you everything I know about her."

Hong Yu'er quickly nodded her head.

"I'm Wang Yunxuan."

"Hong Yu'er."

Sometime later—

"I have been wondering this for a while now, but isn't the spiritual energy around her weird?" Someone there suddenly said while pointing at Yan Yan.

"Yes, I have also been thinking about that for a while now," said another person.

Su Liqing then said, "She has a special talent that allows her to communicate with the Profound Qi around her— at least in our previous world. I think Su Yang called her 'Heaven's Favorite' before."

"What?! Heaven's Favorite?!" The goddesses were shocked when they heard this term, and they all stared at Yan Yan with great interest.

"Young lady, can you communicate with the Profound Qi in this world?" Wang Yunxuan asked her a moment later in a somewhat nervous voice.

Yan Yan looked around for a moment before nodding her head, "Yes, they have been trying to communicate with me ever since I came outside."

"Heavens..." Wang Yunxuan and the others mumbled in a low voice after hearing her words, seemingly speechless.

Chapter 926 A New Home

"Heaven's Favorite... How do we train someone like that?" One of the goddesses asked after a moment of silence.

"No clue. As much as I want to teach her normally, it could potentially hinder her progress instead. It would be ideal to have another Heaven's Favorite teaching her... but we don't have anyone like that in the sect."

"Wait... Sister Yue is also Heaven's Favorite, right? Why don't we ask her for help?" Someone suddenly suggested.

"Sister Yue? But we don't even know where she is."

"I mean we can try looking for her. I think I heard rumors of her appearing in Martial Heaven 100 years ago."

"Who should go looking for her?"

"I will go if you let me take care of the babies first..." One of them volunteered for something in return.

"..."

The others looked at her.

"Okay. I don't mind." Wang Yunxuan said, and she continued, "But let's not make the little girl wait too long. One year— you get one year with the babies. Does anyone have problems with this?"

The goddess shook their heads.

"Then it's decided. Sister Biyu will be the first to take care of the babies regardless of the tournament results, but she will have to look for Sister Yue afterward."

'Tournament?'

The second Su Family raised their eyebrows upon hearing this. What's this about a tournament?

"Little girl, I'm sorry, but you'll have to wait a little longer for a mentor. We'd like to teach you, but your talents are too great, and we don't want to hinder your limitless future, so we will get another sister that has the same talents as you to mentor you. However, we don't know her location right now, so we will have to look for her first. But if you need help or advice for anything, you can speak with any of us." Wang Yunxuan said to Yan Yan, who nodded calmly.

Sometime later, Wang Yunxuan turned to look at Qiuyue and said, "You're from the Sacred Moon Palace, right? I heard from Sister Ziyi who heard from Su Yang. Your situation is a little special, and you're running away from the Sacred Moon Palace, so we're not sure what we should do with you. What do you want to do?"

After thinking for a moment, Qiuyue said, "I'd like to improve my cultivation as quickly as possible. Although Su Yang said that he'd take care of the Sacred Moon Palace and the Moon God for me, I don't want to push all of my responsibilities to him. Furthermore, my cultivation has halted in the previous world due to a lack of cultivation resources and Profound Qi, so I am not sure where I should start now..."

"We may not know anything about the Sacred Moon Palace's cultivation technique, but if you need cultivation resources, we have plenty of that. Even if your cultivation halted for a few thousand years, you're still fairly young, so it won't have any permanent effect on your future— as long as you cultivate diligently going forward." One of the goddesses said to her.

"Thank you, Seniors." Qiuyue nodded her head.

"As for your presence within the sect, we will keep it a secret and give you a new identity."

Sometime later, Wang Yunxuan said, "Now that everyone has a mentor, let's go see your new living quarters. After that, we will give you your uniforms."

"Wait a second." Sister Biyu suddenly stepped forward and said, "The Sacred Lands forbid males from entering without permission, right? What about babies? We have a male with us, don't we?"

She then pointed at Su Tianying.

"Now that you mention it... What should we do? Babies should be fine, right? After all, they're just babies."

"Sister Yunxuan, maybe you can speak with the Sacred Empress and ask her for permission. He's just a baby."

Wang Yunxuan frowned slightly and said, "Even if they are babies, I don't think the Sacred Empress cares if they are adults or babies— men are not allowed, especially if we cannot tell her that they're Su Yang's babies..."

If she told the Sacred Empress that Su Tianying was Su Yang's descendant, then there was a good chance that she'd allow it, perhaps even take care of the baby herself, but they are not allowed to reveal the fact that Su Yang is still alive.

"I mean... We can always not tell her and keep this a secret... We just need to make sure to keep the baby out of others' view." Someone suddenly suggested.

"While we can certainly do that, I do not like the idea of lying to the Sacred Empress, especially since she's the reason we have been able to live in relative peace for the past two thousand years." Wang Yunxuan said.

After the Su Family scattered, they came to the Sacred Lands in hopes to start their new sect, and after speaking with the Sacred Empress who welcomed them with wide arms, Luo Ziyi and the others began

living a peaceful life in the Sacred Lands without needing to worry about intruders or attackers, as the entire Sacred Lands was protected by the Sacred Empress.

"If you make it sound like that, I guess so... Then what should we tell her? We obviously can't tell her that he's Su Yang's child."

"We don't have to tell her anything. Just ask her for permission without giving any details. This way, we won't be lying to her, but she also won't know anything."

"I will think of something. For now, let's deal with their living quarters." Wang Yunxuan said.

Sometime later, the original Su Family led the new Su Family to their living quarters in the inner areas of the sect where Luo Ziyi and the other Su Family lived, making it also the most secure location within the entire sect.

Once the new Su Family settled in their new homes, they were handed their new uniform, giving them new identities.

Meanwhile, Luo Ziyi exited the Sacred Lands and made her way to the Frozen Palace in her new appearance.

Chapter 927 Celestial City

"Hello, which room is 'Xiao Yang' currently staying in? I am his fiancée." Luo Ziyi approached the front desk at the Frozen Palace and asked the worker behind the desk.

The lady working at the desk looked at the ordinary-looking young lady standing before her and said, "Xiao Yang? Please give me a moment to look through the guests..."

A few moments later, the worker gave her Su Yang's room number, not doubting her identity even for a second.

Luo Ziyi then went upstairs and knocked on his room.

The door opened a moment later, and a round figure appeared before her.

"Enter," he said to her.

Luo Ziyi nodded and entered the room.

Once she was inside, she created a concealment formation around the room before speaking, "Are you ready?"

"Yes. How are the others?" Su Yang nodded and asked.

"They're doing fine. The others should be taking care of them right now." Luo Ziyi said.

"I see... So did they say anything?" Su Yang then asked.

"What do you think? They all want to meet you," she said.

"As much as I want to meet them, they'll attract too much attention..." Su Yang showed a bittersweet smile on his face.

"I know, that's why they have a suggestion. They will meet you one at a time, and they will be disguised just like I am currently," she said.

"This way, they won't attract any attention, and they get to meet you. What do you think?"

"Well... I can't really say no to them when I've made them suffer for two thousand years. But how will they visit me? I will be a disciple of the Boundless Yin Yang Sect after meeting with the God of Alchemy, and they're really strict when it comes to guests. If they disguise themselves, there's no chance that they'll get to meet me." Su Yang said.

"I'm sure they'll think of something. I doubt anything will prevent them from meeting you again."

Su Yang nodded.

Sometime later, Luo Ziyi retrieved two pills from her storage ring and handed them to Su Yang and Xiao Rong.

"Eat this. They're Flawless Transformation Pills; it'll hide your disguise much better than whatever you are using now."

"Thank you."

Su Yang accepted one of the pills and immediately consumed it. Although his appearance didn't change afterward, there were some slight changes to his aura.

"Much better." Luo Ziyi nodded in approval.

Now even she cannot tell that he was in a disguise.

"Where do we go now?" Luo Ziyi asked him a moment later.

"To Jade Heaven, the God of Alchemy's birthplace," he said.

Sometime later, Luo Ziyi removed the concealment formation and left the Frozen Palace with Su Yang, and they made their way to the nearest teleport formation.

"Xiao Rong, you can enter my Dantian to save Ziyi some money," he said to her as they got closer to the teleport formation.

Xiao Rong nodded and entered his Dantian the next moment.

Once they were at the teleport formation and it was their turn, Su Yang said to the old man working the formation, "Ruan Province, Celestial City."

"The capital city of the Ruan Province will cost you 60 high-grade spirit stones per person, so it'll cost you 120 high-grade spirit stones in total."

"Here you go." Luo Ziyi handed 120 high-grade spirit stones to the old man without batting an eye.

"Thank you. Please give us a minute to prepare the teleport formation."

A couple of minutes later, Su Yang and Luo Ziyi entered the teleport formation.

After entering the teleport formation, they exited in Celestial City, the capital city of the Ruan Province and also one of the largest cities within the Celestial Heaven.

The reason Su Yang decided to come to this place instead of heading straight to Jade Heaven was simple— the teleport formation at that city wasn't powerful enough to teleport them directly to the Jade Heaven.

Out of thousands of teleport formations within the Celestial Heaven, there was only a handful of them that were powerful enough to teleport people to other Divine Heavens, and one of them was within the Celestial City.

Though there was another reason why Su Yang needed to go to the Celestial City.

"I will need to buy some ingredients." Su Yang said to Luo Ziyi after they arrived at the city.

"Ingredients? For what?" She asked with her eyebrows raised.

"In order to go to that place, we will need a certain pill— a pill that isn't sold anywhere in the Four Divine Heavens because nobody besides the God of Alchemy and myself knows it exists, much less the ingredients."

He then looked at her and said with a smile, "I hope you brought enough money with you since these ingredients aren't exactly cheap."

Luo Ziyi responded with a smile, "Have you already forgotten about my background?"

"Just making sure," he laughed.

And he continued, "Follow me. We're going to head to the Grand Celestial Plaza now. They should have most if not all of the ingredients we need."

A few hours of traveling later, they arrived before a massive marketplace that took up a fourth of the entire city.

There were restaurants, jewelry stores, weapon stores, medicine stores, auction houses— almost every kind of store in existence available in the Grand Celestial Plaza.

Once they were at the Grand Celestial Plaza, Su Yang and Luo Ziyi began entering every medicine store available in the place.

"Do you have any of these ingredients?" Su Yang showed the worker a list of ingredients.

"We have the 100,000-year-old Thunder God Vine," said the worker.

"How much do you want for it?"

"100,000 high-grade spirit stones." The man said without hesitation.

Su Yang didn't immediately give a response and turned to look at Luo Ziyi. After all, she was the one paying for everything.

"We'll take it," she said in a calm voice a moment later.

"Thank you for your business esteemed guests. Allow me a couple of minutes to bring the Thunder God Vine here." The worker then disappeared to the back of the store, returning a few minutes later with a large box that was as long as an adult's arm.

Chapter 928 Burning Spirit Wood

"Here's the Thunder God Vine. Please check it to see if there are any problems." The store worker opened the box, revealing a single strand of purple vine that has what appears to be lightning lines going through it.

Su Yang looked at the Thunder God Vine for a moment before nodding his head, "It looks right."

"Then that will be 100,000 high-grade spirit stones."

Luo Ziyi then placed 10 flawless-quality spirit stones that were worth 100,000 high-grade spirit stones on the desk.

The worker accepted the money before wrapping the box in front of them and handing it over.

"Thank you for your business," he said to them.

Su Yang immediately tossed the treasure inside his storage ring before leaving the place.

"How many more do we need?" Luo Ziyi asked him afterward.

"8 more ingredients," he said.

After their first successful trip, the two of them proceeded to visit every single medicine store within the Grand Celestial Plaza.

Unfortunately, despite their early success, they were unable to buy another ingredient until 20 stores later.

A few days later, they entered the last available medicine store within the Grand Celestial Plaza.

"Do you have any ingredients on this list?" Su Yang showed the middle-aged woman working at the store his list that had half of its ingredients crossed out.

"We have the 50,000-year-old Burning Spirit Wood. It'll cost 150,000 high-grade spirit stones."

"Okay. We'll take it." Luo Ziyi said.

"I will be right back."

After spending a few minutes in the back of the store, the middle-aged woman returned with a rectangular box wrapped with a special cloth.

She then unwrapped the cloth and opened the box, revealing to them a piece of charred wood that emitted an ancient and profound aura.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows when he saw this charred wood.

The middle-aged woman then quickly closed the box and wrapped it back up with the cloth again.

"That would be 150,000 high-grade spirit stones," said the middle-aged woman.

However, Luo Ziyi didn't retrieve the money and stood there in silence.

She then turned to look at Su Yang and asked him, "What do you think?"

Su Yang looked at the middle-aged woman and asked her in a calm voice, "Are you doing this because we look inexperienced or easy to fool in your eyes?"

"What do you mean by such words?" The middle-aged woman immediately frowned.

"Oh, you're acting like you have no idea what you did now? Then allow me to enlighten you."

Su Yang pointed at the box and said, "That's not a 50,000-year-old Burning Spirit Wood. It's a 50,000-year-old Burning Wood that's almost identical to the Burning Spirit Wood. Unless one is a somewhat experienced alchemist, they wouldn't be able to tell the difference. As for its worth... it's worth only a tenth of what the Burning Spirit Wood is worth."

The middle-aged woman began sweating inward when she heard Su Yang's words.

"I-Is that so? I deeply apologize. I must have made a mistake and brought out the wrong one. Please give me a moment. I will return with the proper one." The middle-aged woman retrieved the wooden box.

However, before she could go anywhere, Luo Ziyi spoke in a calm voice, "That won't be necessary anymore."

She then turned around and said, "Let's go, darling. Looks like we'll be bothering Senior Qin today."

The middle-aged woman immediately froze her movements when she heard Luo Ziyi's words, and she quickly turned around and exclaimed, "Wait! I didn't intentionally scam you! I swear it was just an honest mistake!"

Senior Qin was a prominent name within the Grand Celestial Plaza, mostly because he controlled the entire place.

The Grand Celestial Plaza also has a zero dishonest business policy, and those who are caught doing shady business will have their business taken down and permanently banned from doing business in the Grand Celestial Plaza again, which is a major loss for the business since the Grand Celestial Plaza is one of if not the most profitable places in the Celestial Heaven.

"Just an honest mistake, huh? For some reason, I cannot convince myself to believe such words." Luo Ziyi said.

"H-How about this? I will give you a discount for my mistake. 100,000 high-grade spirit stones instead of 150,000." The middle-aged woman showed them a stiff smile on her face.

"Only 50,000 high-grade spirit stones? Is your store really only worth that little?" Luo Ziyi asked her with a nonchalant look on her face.

The middle-aged woman's body trembled in anger after hearing such words, and she screamed, "Are you really going to try and take down my business because of a single mistake?! You also have no proof

that I'd tried to scam you! You know what? Go ahead! Go complain to Senior Qin! I doubt he'll even listen to some unknown brats!"

A mysterious smile with a hint of coldness appeared on Luo Ziyi's face, and she retrieved a jade medallion with the name 'Qin Kai' engraved onto it.

"Maybe he'll listen to me if I have this," Luo Ziyi said afterward.

"T-That's the Grand Celestial Plaza's Jade Medallion! W-Why do you have something like that?! It must be fake!" The middle-aged woman gasped when she saw the beautiful medallion in Luo Ziyi's grasp.

The Grand Celestial Plaza's Jade Medallion is a special object that is only given to the most valued and trusted customers. As long as one has this medallion, their status within the Grand Celestial Plaza would only be below Senior Qin himself.

"Whether it is real or not will be apparent once I give Senior Qin a visit. I hope it was worth it— trying to take advantage of seemingly ignorant people."

The middle-aged woman gritted her teeth in anger.

Once Luo Ziyi and Su Yang reached the door of the store, she shouted in a regretful voice, "Fine! I will give the 50,000-year-old Burning Spirit Wood to you for free as an apology for my mistake! In return, please forgive this one for her mistakes. It will never happen again! I swear!"

Luo Ziyi stopped walking and turned to look at the woman, and after a moment of silence, she nodded, "Okay."

Chapter 929 Golden Treasure Auction House

"Here's the real 50,000-year-old Burning Spirit Wood." The middle-aged woman returned with the real treasure a few minutes later.

Su Yang glanced at the charred wood in the box that looked the exact same as the previous treasure besides its shape and being slightly smaller in size and nodded his head in silence.

He then tossed the treasure into his storage ring.

A few moments later, they left the store.

"It's been a while since I experienced being scammed. If I wasn't disguised, such a thing would have never happened." Luo Ziyi sighed after they left the store.

"You'll get used to it," said Su Yang with a smile on his face.

"Anyways, now what? That was the last medicine store, and we still need four more ingredients." Luo Ziyi asked him a moment later.

"There are still auction houses. Let's get a list of everything being sold from an information broker."

"Couldn't we have done that in the beginning? We could've saved so much time." Luo Ziyi said with her eyebrows raised.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Of course, but that would mean we get to spend less time with each other."

"Darling..." Luo Ziyi looked at him with widened eyes and a warm smile on her face.

They proceeded to look for an information broker within the Grand Celestial Plaza.

"How may I help you?"

An old man sitting by a large fountain spoke when a fatty and an ordinary-looking girl approached him.

"We'd like to buy some information," said Su Yang.

"What kind of information?"

"I want to know every single ingredient being sold in the auction houses here for the next week," he said.

"10 medium-grade spirit stones for that information and I will have it ready by the end of the day. Make it 20 and I will have the information within half the day," said the old man.

"Here's 50 medium-grade spirit stones. I want the information within the next two hours. Or are you not able to move that fast?" Su Yang said to him.

The old man smiled and said, "I will see you at this exact spot in two hours."

Su Yang nodded and handed the spirit stones to him, not worried that the old man might not return.

"What do you want to do in the meantime? Want to get something to eat?" Su Yang asked Luo Ziyi afterward.

"Sure."

Once they arrived at a restaurant, Su Yang said, "Xiao Rong, you can come out of there now if you'd like."

Xiao Rong, who had been resting inside his Dantian this entire time appeared outside.

They then entered the restaurant together and proceeded to spend the next two hours satisfying their taste buds.

Two hours later, they returned to the water fountain.

After looking around for a second, they found the old man sitting at the same location and approached him.

"Welcome back."

The old man then handed him a pamphlet that had every single auction house within the Grand Celestial Plaza listed alongside all of the treasures they were selling.

"Thank you. Here's another 50 spirit stones for your hard work." Su Yang then tipped the old man another 50 medium-grade spirit stones.

"Thank you for your business and graciousness, Young Master." The old man bowed to him.

After leaving the area, Su Yang opened the pamphlet and began looking through the list.

"Perfect. The rest of the ingredients are being sold in these auction houses, but we'll have to spend two more weeks in this place to acquire all of them." Su Yang said.

And continued, "The Golden Treasure Auction House will be selling the Nightmare Dust in three days, which is the earliest ingredient we can obtain."

"In the meantime, let's have some fun." Luo Ziyi said with an enchanting smile on her face.

Sometime later, they rented out a room in one of the countless hotels within the Grand Celestial Plaza.

Once they entered the room, Luo Ziyi created a concealment formation around the room and removed her disguise.

Su Yang also removed his disguise before entering the bed.

"You know, it's a weird feeling cultivating with a younger you," she said to him.

"Would you prefer my older appearance then?" He asked her.

"I never said it was a bad feeling. I like it. It makes me feel younger as well." Luo Ziyi smiled.

After chatting for a few minutes, they started embracing each other on the bed, and they would continue this for the next three days until the Golden Treasure Auction House was auctioning the Nightmare Dust.

Before leaving the hotel, Su Yang and Luo Ziyi consumed another pill to disguise themselves again.

Once they were outside, they started making their way towards the auction house.

An hour later, they arrived at a large circular building that was made mostly out of gold and had the golden sign 'Golden Treasure Auction House' hung directly above the golden gates at the entrance.

The interior of the building was also decorated with gold antiques, not to mention the gold walls.

The place was also incredibly spacious with tens of thousands of available seats, and this didn't include the VIP area that was located above the public area.

Su Yang and Luo Ziyi picked a random seat in the front and began waiting for the auction to start since they arrived early.

While they waited, Su Yang retrieved the pamphlet he got from the information broker and looked at what else the auction house was selling today.

Although there were many valuable treasures being sold, none of them really caught his eyes besides the Nightmare Dust.

About two hours later when the auction house was 90 percent full of people, the lights in the building suddenly dimmed while the platform in the front brightened with light.

Then, a beautiful young lady walked onto the stage and spoke with a bright expression on her face, "Welcome to the Golden Treasure Auction House, guests, and esteemed guests. We will begin the auction shortly, but first, allow us to quickly go over the rules."

Chapter 930 Life-Saving Treasure

"First and foremost, only bid on an item if you're serious and you have the funds to pay for it afterward! Failure to pay for a treasure after winning the bid will have serious consequences!"

The young beauty began speaking of the rules shortly after her appearance.

"Two! Please respect each other as fellow bidders! You are not allowed to pressure others into giving up simply because they are outbidding you by using your status or background as pressure!"

"If you break this rule, we will have to ask you to leave regardless of your background! If you wish to challenge us, just remember that the Golden Treasure Auction House is backed by Senior Qin, Lord of the Grand Celestial Plaza!"

In the Four Divine Heavens, one's status is incredibly important and is held in higher regard than even one's cultivation most of the time.

Because of this, it has become somewhat natural for people to use it for almost everything, and this included bullying others.

"Now onto the third rule! The Golden Treasure Auction House only accepts spirit stones and spirit jades for payment! Unless specified by us, we will not accept trades! Please keep this in mind!"

"Next rule is— no refunds! The moment you win an auction, that treasure is already considered yours, and the auction house will not accept refunds or returns regardless of the circumstances!"

"Last but not least, to save time, please respect the previous bid! If there is a bid before yours, your bid should increase it by a sensible amount! For example, if there is already a bid of 1,000 low-grade spirit stones, your bid shouldn't be 1,001 or 1,010 spirit stones! After all, we don't want to spend an entire day on a single treasure!"

"Now that you all know the rules, I hope you'll respect and honor it!"

After taking a deep breath, the young lady continued, "And without further ado, let's start the auction with our first treasure— the Silver Dragon Lance!"

A moment later, another beautiful young lady appeared on the stage while carrying a long tray with a silver spear resting on it.

"This Silver Dragon Lance is a Spiritual Treasure at the Emyrean-grade, and it's made from scales of a Silver Dragon, making it incredibly durable and near indestructible! Not only that, but it also enhances all fire element martial techniques!"

"The bid will start at 100,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

The moment the bid began, people began raising their hands to increase the bid.

"110,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"120,000!"

"150,000!"

"200,000!"

A few minutes later, the Silver Dragon Spear was sold for a grand total of 500,000 high-grade spirit stones.

The second auction started shortly after.

"For the second auction, we have another Empyrean-grade Spiritual Treasure!"

Once the girl carrying the tray returned to the stage, she showed the crowd a pair of black and white daggers.

"This is the Yin Yang Dagger. It has a unique skill that allows one to ignore spiritual energy. This means that no matter how powerful your enemy, as long you can land a hit on their body, it will guarantee damage!"

"The bid will start at 300,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"500,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"550,000!"

"700,000!"

In just a minute, the price for the Yin Yang Dagger increased all the way to one million high-grade spirit stones.

After another three minutes of aggressive bidding by the crowd, the Yin Yang Dagger sold for a grand total of 1,500,000 high-grade spirit stones to some young man wearing a disciple uniform.

The auction did not stop for any breaks and continued in this manner for over half an hour.

"For our next treasure, we have a unique life-saving treasure in the form of a necklace! It was found deep within the Red Poison Swamp last year, and it has the ability to defend one against any attacks below the Ancient Sovereign Realm! However, according to our experts that examined the treasure, there is only a single use left in this treasure before it loses its effect."

"Regardless, it is still a life-saving treasure that can save one's life during a crucial moment, and life-saving treasures are generally very sought after because of their practicality and value! Therefore, the bid will begin at 1,000,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"1,010,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"I bid 1,100,000!"

"1,500,000!"

To nobody's surprise, this auction with a life-saving treasure that could save one's life attracted more participants than any of the previous auctions.

In just minutes, the price for the treasure skyrocketed to 5 million high-grade spirit stones.

If one were to convert that to ordinary spirit stones, it would be equal to an astronomical amount of 500 trillion spirit stones.

This amount of spirit stones was so massive that even if everyone in the mortal world Su Yang came from were to combine their money, it would not equate to a small fraction of this amount.

"Is there no one else? The current highest bid is at 5 million high-grade spirit stones!"

"Going once!"

"Going twice!"

"6 million." A voice suddenly resounded at the last moment, raising the bid by an entire million.

This sudden and massive bid surprised everyone in the auction house, and they all turned to look at the person who currently has her hand raised.

It was a young lady with ordinary features across the board.

When Su Yang noticed that Luo Ziyi had suddenly participated in the bid, he turned to look at her before asking, "Why do you need something like that? It's worthless to you."

She smiled at him and said, "It's not for me, silly. It's for you."

Her words left Su Yang somewhat speechless.

"S-Six million going once!"

"Going twice!"

"And sold! Congratulations on winning the auction, esteemed guest!" The young lady said while looking at Luo Ziyi with an excited look on her face.

Chapter 931 Nightmare Dus

After Luo Ziyi won the bid, they continued on with the auction, as she would have to pay for the treasure only after the auction.

After another two hours of chaotic bidding, the young lady on the stage eventually carried out a tray that had a small bottle of purple substance resting inside.

"This is a unique treasure called Nightmare Dust! It is only found deep within the Nightmare Valley where natural hallucination occurs! They are usually used as an ingredient when concocting pills, being a key ingredient to multiple powerful pills such as the Nightmare Pill and the Purple Poison Pill to name a few!"

"The bid will start at 100,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"500,000 high-grade spirit stones." Luo Ziyi was the first to raise her hand, increasing the price by 500 percent instantly.

Many people who had intentions of bidding immediately gave up after hearing the price, as they knew that their chances of winning were incredibly low if they didn't shell out a fortune for the Nightmare Dust.

However, there were still a couple of people who decided to bid against her.

"510,000!" A middle-aged man raised her hand.

"520,000!"

"530,000!"

"600,000." Luo Ziyi said.

The place quickly turned silent after Luo Ziyi's bid.

"600,000 going once!"

"Going twice—"

"1 million." A deep voice suddenly resounded from the top floors in one of the VIP areas.

Luo Ziyi's eyebrows lifted slightly when she heard this voice, and then she raised her hand and said, "1,500,000."

"2 million."

The deep voice quickly returned.

By now, the price of the Nightmare Dust was far above what it was worth, even breaking records in the auction house.

"Heavens... The last time Nightmare Dust was sold in the Grand Celestial Plaza, it went for 600,000 high-grade spirit stones at the Spirit Jade Auction House, and that already shocked people, but compared to this..."

The bidders were dumbfounded by this auction, and they were curious why these two individuals needed the Nightmare Dust so desperately.

"3 million." Luo Ziyi continued the bid, adding another million to it.

"..."

The deep voice didn't immediately respond, clearly hesitating whether he should continue or not.

"3 million high-grade spirit stones going once!"

"Going twice!"

"And sold!"

"Congratulations, esteemed guest! You have won the Nightmare Dust for 3 million!"

In just a single auction, Luo Ziyi has spent a total of 9 million high-grade spirit stones on two treasures.

Of course, this amount wasn't anything too significant for her and was only akin to a drop in the ocean.

The auction ended after another hour.

After the last treasure was sold, the young lady on the stage said, "Thank you all for participating in today's auction! If you have won a bid, please follow one of these ladies, who will lead you to another room where you can pay for your treasures."

Over a dozen pretty young ladies appeared on the stage.

Luo Ziyi and Su Yang picked a random girl and followed her to another room a few minutes later.

"Your total will be 9 million high-grade spirit stones." The young lady said to them.

Luo Ziyi proceeded to hand over 900 flawless-grade spirit stones to her.

"Thank you. Here are your treasures."

The young lady then handed them a tray with the necklace and the Nightmare Dusk resting on it.

"Here you go."

Luo Ziyi took the treasures before handing them to Su Yang in a casual manner.

"Thanks," he said as he tossed them into his storage ring.

"Just three more now, huh?"

However, before they left, the young girl said, "Excuse me, esteemed guests. Since you have spent over 5 million high-grade spirit stones at our auction, you have qualified for the VIP area. The next time you come here, you may show this to one of the workers here and they will take you to the VIP area."

She then offered them a medallion made completely out of gold.

Luo Ziyi accepted the medallion even though she doesn't intend on returning anytime in the future before leaving the auction house with Su Yang.

"When's the next auction?" Luo Ziyi asked him afterward.

"In four days," he said.

"Then let's get back to the hotel and have some more fun for the next four days," she said with a smile on her face.

However, before they could get very far away from the Golden Treasure Auction House, an old man wearing purple robes appeared before them and blocked their path.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows when he saw this old man's uniform, and he immediately recognized it as the Violet Furnace Academy's uniform, one of many alchemy sects within the Celestial Heaven.

And judging by the pattern on his clothes, this old man was a sect elder from the Violet Furnace Academy.

Although this old man hasn't said anything yet, it was clear to both Su Yang and Luo Ziyi what he wanted.

"How can we help you?" Luo Ziyi asked him.

The old man smiled and said, "My name is Gao Huan, and I am a sect elder of the Violet Furnace Academy. If you can't already tell by my voice, I was the one who was bidding for the Nightmare Dust."

Indeed, this old man from the Violet Furnace Academy was the one who went as high as 2 million high-grade spirit stones when bidding for the Nightmare Dust.

"And what do you want from us? If you're here for the Nightmare Dust, then I'm afraid you'll have to look elsewhere." Luo Ziyi said, not caring about his background.

The old man remained smiling despite her words, and he said, "If I could find the Nightmare Dust elsewhere, I wouldn't be bothering you right now. I have been looking everywhere for the Nightmare Dust the past year but to no avail, and I really need it to help my disciple with his breakthrough. Is there any way we can talk through this?"

Chapter 932 Dragon Bindweed

"I only have 2 million high-grade spirit stones for me, so I cannot buy it off you, or I would've continued to bid. Maybe there is something else I can do for you?"

Luo Ziyi shook her head and said, "Unfortunately, we also need the Nightmare Dust, so we cannot give it to you regardless of your offer. Now if you'll excuse us, we have somewhere else to be."

The smile on the old man finally disappeared, and he spoke in a deep voice, "Young lads, think about this more carefully. You can either leave this place on good terms with the Violet Furnace Academy, or you can leave as..."

The old man didn't finish his sentence, but even an idiot could tell that he was threatening them with his background.

Luo Ziyi stopped and said, "You're going to hold a grudge over something this insignificant? That says a lot about your character and the Violet Furnace Academy."

"And if you're going to threaten someone, at least make sure you have sufficient backing to do so. The Violet Furnace Academy is barely a top 100 sect within the Celestial Heaven. How dare you go around bullying people with such a backing?" Luo Ziyi then retrieved the Grand Celestial Plaza's Jade Medallion and showed it to him.

"T-That's the—!"

The old man was greatly shocked when Luo Ziyi suddenly revealed her token.

"Maybe I should visit the Violet Furnace Academy and speak with your Sect Master. I happen to know Senior Guan very well."

The old man's body trembled when she mentioned his Sect Master so casually.

"P-Please have mercy! I was wrong!" The old man quickly lowered his head and apologized to them.

"Hmph!"

Luo Ziyi couldn't be bothered to waste her time with this old man any longer and proceeded to walk away.

"Are you sure it's okay to flash around the Grand Celestial Plaza's Jade Medallion so casually? What if it reveals your identity?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"It'll be fine. It's not like I am the only person in the Four Divine Heavens with a Grand Celestial Plaza's Jade Medallion. In fact, there are hundreds of them. And even if my identity is revealed, it doesn't matter too much as long as your identity remains safe," she responded.

Sometime later, they returned to the hotel and proceeded to spend the next four days embracing each other.

On the fourth day, they went to participate in another auction that was selling one of the ingredients they needed, and Luo Ziyi ended up spending another million high-grade spirit stones.

The next auction was a week away, and the auction happened to be selling the last two treasures they needed for the trip.

"The Vermilion Dew will begin at 300,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"One million." Luo Ziyi raised her hand first.

When the others heard the price, those who had their hands raised quickly lowered it.

"One million going once... going twice..."

"And sold to this esteemed guest for 1 million high-grade spirit stones!"

A few auctions later, the last ingredient they needed appeared.

"The Dragon Bindweed will start at 500,000 high-grade spirit stones!"

"One million." Luo Ziyi was the first to bid again.

"1,100,000 high-grade spirit stones!" Another person called out after her.

"1,500,000!" A new bidder joined.

The Dragon Bindweed was much more sought after than the Vermilion Dew, mostly because it was the key ingredient to many high-tier pills and more practical.

However, under Luo Ziyi's seemingly inexhaustible wealth, the other bidders were left speechless.

"2 million."

In the end, Luo Ziyi won the auction again.

After paying for the treasures at the end of the auction, Luo Ziyi and Su Yang returned to the hotel.

Su Yang laid all nine treasures on the table and nodded with a satisfied look on his face.

"We just need to reach the Jade Heaven and head to the center of the Jaded Garden now."

"Wait... We have to go to the Jaded Garden? Why didn't you say this earlier?" Luo Ziyi sighed.

"Hm? What's the matter? Is there something wrong with the Jaded Garden?" Su Yang asked her.

As far as he was aware, the Jaded Garden wasn't a special place that required special attention, so why was Luo Ziyi acting like this?

"Around a thousand years ago, the Jaded Garden suddenly became enveloped by an extremely deadly fog that can kill even a cultivator at Immortal Ascension if ingested... This poison fog is so powerful that even those with a Divine Body cannot get close."

"Experts have tried to examine the poison, but not even the best alchemy masters in the Four Divine Heavens can figure out what created this poison, nor do they have any solutions for it. It's literally impossible to enter the area."

"Perhaps the God of Alchemy might be able to concoct a pill that can protect one against the fog, but... Well, you already know the situation with her."

Su Yang raised his eyebrow after hearing this, and he asked her, "What does this fog look like?"

"I have not personally seen it, but from what I heard, it's a black fog."

"Hmm..." Su Yang immediately began pondering.

"Do you have an idea what it is?" Luo Ziyi had this feeling and decided to ask him.

He nodded and said, "When I was still studying under the God of Alchemy, I recall seeing something similar. I asked her about it, and she told me that it was an experiment to create the most powerful poisonous pill in the Four Divine Heavens."

"You're telling me that the God of Alchemy was the one responsible for the black fog— that she's the reason the Jaded Garden became enveloped in this deadly poison?" Luo Ziyi was speechless.

"Yes. The entrance to her secret location is also within the Jaded Garden, so it makes perfect sense why she did it, especially if she doesn't want to be bothered or found."

"Then what should we do now? Unless you have a solution for the poison fog, we won't be able to meet her." Luo Ziyi then asked him.

Chapter 933 Leaving Celestial Heaven

"Unfortunately, I don't know what she used to create the poison fog, nor do I have any idea how to deal with it." Su Yang shook his head.

"When I asked her about it, she was still experimenting on it, so she didn't tell me much about it, only some of the ingredients she'd used, and they were all some of the most poisonous ingredients in the Four Divine Heavens. It even shocked me when I learned the ingredients."

"And even if I knew all of the ingredients, I don't have the capability to concoct a pill that can defeat something the God of Alchemy personally made. It's impossible." Su Yang shrugged, giving up without even thinking about trying.

As someone who used to study under the God of Alchemy, he knew very well how powerful her pills were, especially if they were created by her. He has challenged her many times before, but he never managed to beat her after countless attempts.

"Then what now? If we cannot enter the Jaded Garden, we won't be able to meet the God of Alchemy. Are we going to give up seeing her now?" Luo Ziyi asked him.

"No... There's still another way to meet her, but that will require going to her sect and getting permission to enter the most secluded and secured area in the entire sect, which is even more impossible than getting past the poisonous fog in my current state."

"I say we should still head to the Jaded Garden and see if there's anything I can do. If not, then I will simply give up on meeting her for now. Are you okay with this?" Su Yang asked her.

"I don't mind. I am just tagging along, anyway," she said.

"Alright. Then let's head to the Jade Heaven for now."

Luo Ziyi nodded.

They checked out of the hotel sometime later and began making their way towards one of the most powerful teleport formations within the Celestial Heaven.

A few hours later, they left the Grand Celestial Plaza and arrived before a massive teleport formation that was almost a mile in diameter.

Su Yang looked around once they arrived at the place, and he could see a large sign that said 'Martial Heaven' hung on top of a tall pole right outside the formation for everyone to see.

Since there are three other Divine Heavens and only one teleport formation available, the workers made it so that the teleport formation would rotate the destinations every once in a while so that everyone heading to the Martial Heaven would be able to go there at once.

For those who wished to travel to the other Divine Heavens, they were required to wait until the teleport formation changed destination.

As for how often the destination changes, the teleport formation will change destinations every 6 hours, allowing everyone to go to their destination without needing to wait too long for the rotations.

Su Yang and Luo Ziyi then went to look at the schedule.

Once they found the rotation schedule, they could see Jade Heaven listed second on the schedule right below the Martial Heaven, meaning that the teleport formation will rotate its destination to the Jade Heaven next.

While they waited, Su Yang and Luo Ziyi went to reserve their slots to use the teleport formation, as only a limited number of people could be transported at once.

"Two people. Jade Heaven." Luo Ziyi said to the middle-aged man working behind the counter in a large store set up right beside the teleport formation.

The middle-aged man then turned to look at Su Yang and said in a nonchalant voice, "That Spiritual Beast hiding inside your Dantian also counts as an individual. Did you think that you could fool me? I have been working this job for over ten thousand years. I have seen countless people like you."

Su Yang laughed when he heard the man's words before speaking in a shameless voice, "I had no idea that Spiritual Beasts also counted. If that's the case, then three people."

"It'll cost 25 million high-grade spirit stones for each individual traveling to Jade Heaven. 75 million in total since there are three of you." The middle-aged man said in a calm voice.

Although the price may seem astronomical at first, it was logical if one considered how much spiritual energy was required to teleport someone from one world to another.

Luo Ziyi then handed 7,500 flawless-quality spirit stones to the middle-aged man.

After counting the money, the man handed them three tokens with the word 'Jade' engraved onto them.

"You will need it to enter the teleport formation. If you lose it, you will have to buy another one." He warned them.

"Thank you." Su Yang accepted the tokens before leaving the place.

Once they had their tokens, Su Yang walked to the entrance of the teleport formation and proceeded to wait for the rotation.

A few hours later, someone changed the 'Martial Heaven' sign to a 'Jade Heaven' sign.

Su Yang and Luo Ziyi— alongside thousands of other people began approaching the entrance.

After showing their tokens, they were allowed inside the teleport formation, and they proceeded to wait some more until ten thousand people filled up the teleport formation.

Once everyone was gathered, the workers there closed the gates and said to them, "We will now activate the teleport formation at the count of 10."

"Ten... nine... eight..."

"Seven... six... five..."

"Four... three... two..."

"One... and activate!"

The teleport formation began emitting a profound light, and then a massive portal appeared.

"Please enter quickly! You only have a minute to pass through the teleport formation!"

Su Yang and the others immediately began flying towards the teleport formation, entering the portal and leaving the Celestial Heaven a moment later.

A few people that were not part of the group that was authorized to enter the portal could be seen flying towards the portal from outside, clearly trying to head to Jade Heaven without paying the astronomical fees.

However, a couple of experts intervened by blocking them from entering the portal with some of them even killing those who tried to enter without paying.

Chapter 934 Jade Heaven

"Ah! Have mercy!"

Those who were not immediately slain by the guards pleaded them for mercy when their plans to enter the portal without paying failed miserably.

The spectators were not surprised when they saw this. In fact, there are always people trying such stunts.

It was so common that people could be seen attempting to do so almost every day.

Some people would succeed in entering the portal without paying, but the majority of them would fail before they could even get close with some even dying in the process.

After entering the portal, Su Yang could see the other people that had entered the portal, and all of them were traveling through a seemingly endless wormhole.

"Darling, how are you feeling?" Luo Ziyi, who was directly beside him, asked.

"A little lightheaded," he said.

"That is expected since this is technically your first time entering such a powerful teleport formation in that body."

Su Yang looked around and said, "It should take a couple of days before we arrive at the other side, right? It's been a while since I entered one of these even from before."

"Yes, it should take three to four days— provided that we don't encounter any Rift Demons."

"Rift Demons, huh?"

"You probably don't know this since you recently came back, but Rift Demons are becoming more of a common occurrence," she said.

"Really? How common are they becoming?" Su Yang asked with a surprised look on his face.

"They used to appear once every 100,000 trips, but nowadays, they are appearing around once every 10,000 trips."

"That much of a difference? How are the people dealing with this change?"

"They have decided to hire Immortals to take care of these Rift Demons. Do you see that man in the front of the group? He's an Immortal Cultivator at the 1st level of Immortal Ascension. His job is basically to take care of the Rift Demons if they ever decide to appear."

"So they just continue teleporting back and forth? Heavens... I cannot imagine doing such a job, especially at that cultivation..." Su Yang said.

He cannot imagine becoming an Immortal Cultivator just to become a guard for others, spending most of their time in this boring space, going back and forth endlessly.

"I understand where you're coming from, but these guys are paid incredibly well and sometimes even receive recognition from the Heavenly Emperor. That's why the prices went up so much, and that's also why most Immortals do this job— for a chance to receive the Heavenly Emperor's recognition."

'All just to become the Heavenly Emperor's dog? What a miserable life they must live...' Su Yang sighed inwardly.

"If you think about it, they actually have a pretty good job. If a Rift Demon only appears once every ten thousand trips, and each trip takes between three to seven days depending on where you're going and coming from, you basically have decades of inactive days while getting paid incredible amounts of wealth, and if you're lucky, you can even go your entire career without seeing any Rift Demons."

"And if you're unlucky and encounter a Rift Demon even more powerful than yourself..." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Well, a couple of Immortals have actually died already doing this job, but it doesn't stop others from wanting to do it due to its limited slots and desirable rewards." Luo Ziyi said.

"In fact, 500 years ago, a Rift Demon that rivaled even Gods appeared inside a wormhole, and it slaughtered all ten thousand people that were traveling to Martial Heaven including eight Immortals. It shocked the entire Four Divine Heavens afterward."

"Really? I remember something similar had occurred about 50,000 years ago, and the Rift Demon killed a dozen Immortals at that time. I wonder if the recent incident was done by the same Rift Demon." Su Yang mumbled.

"It's not impossible considering how few Rift Demons with such prowess are out there." Luo Ziyi sighed.

"Let's hope we don't encounter that monster since even I won't be able to save us if that happens."

Three days passed in a flash, and before they realized it, the end of the wormhole was already in sight.

Once they exited the wormhole, they appeared in the capital city of Jade Heaven, Divine Jade City.

"It's been a while since I last visited Jade Heaven..." Luo Ziyi mumbled in a low voice as she looked around the decorated city.

Compared to the capital city of Celestial Heaven, the capital city of Jade Heaven was incomparably more decorated and luxurious at glance with many buildings made out of expensive materials that radiated with spiritual energy.

However, this was expected from the richest world out of the Four Divine Heavens, ranking first when it comes to economy and overall wealth.

"Do you miss this place?" Su Yang asked her, who originated from Jade Heaven.

"Not really," she said with a smile on her face.

After spending a few moments gazing at the scenery, Su Yang and Luo Ziyi went to the nearest teleport formation within the city, using that to teleport to the city situated right beside the Jaded Garden.

Once they arrived at the city, they immediately realized that something was off about the city.

It was incredibly quiet, almost as though the place was a ghost town.

However, there were still people living within the city, as they could feel many presences around them.

"Did something happen to this place? It used to be bustling with people when I last visited." Su Yang asked the person managing the teleport formation, who was also the only person in sight.

The man looked at him with raised eyebrows for a moment before speaking, "When was the last time you visited this place? A few hundred years ago? Ever since the poison fog appeared in the Jaded Garden, people have been leaving their houses less and less, only coming out when necessary, or they risk dying from the poison fog that sometimes gets carried by the wind and enters the city."

Chapter 935 Jaded Garden

"The poison fog would enter the city? Even though the Jaded Garden is almost a thousand miles away?" Su Yang was surprised to hear this.

He didn't think the poisoned fog would affect these people who are living so far away.

"Of course. Over a thousand people have died from the poison fog throughout the years." The man said.

"Yet you're out here working diligently? I admire your dedication and bravery," Su Yang said to him.

If he were in this man's shoes, he wouldn't risk his life working such a dangerous and unrewarding job.

"Bravery?" The man scoffed in a way that made it seem like he was mocking himself, and he said, "I only dare to work when there is no wind. If I feel even the slightest breeze, I will immediately—"

The man suddenly stopped speaking when he felt a gentle breeze blowing his figure, and he immediately turned around and ran away, leaving Su Yang speechless.

"Do you think the God of Alchemy is aware of what's happening in this city because of her?" Luo Ziyi asked him a moment later.

"Highly unlikely. However, this isn't the first time that she's affected others' lives unintentionally. Due to her thoughtless character, she has a habit of doing something without thinking about the consequences, nor the trouble it may cause others. I have experienced this many times when I studied under her."

"In fact, due to her unrivaled alchemy talents and her eagerness to experiment on new things, she has caused the people within all Four Divine Heavens more than just a few headaches. I cannot count the number of times her experiments have resulted in disastrous results, sometimes even creating calamities."

"I have heard some stories about her deeds, and they are shocking to say the least..." Luo Ziyi said.

Su Yang showed a bittersweet smile on his face and said, "Many people have warned her about causing trouble for others, and even the Heavenly Emperor tried to talk her out of experimenting with dangerous recipes, but she just doesn't listen, and there's nothing anybody can do about it since the majority of the most powerful pills available in the Four Divine Heavens come from her."

"If they offend her and cause her to stop concocting these pills, who will bear responsibility? Nobody dares! Even the Heavenly Emperor doesn't dare to anger the God of Alchemy, as the consequences could potentially affect the entire cultivation world!"

Luo Ziyi looked at Su Yang in silence as he somewhat bragged about the God of Alchemy, sounding like he was quite proud of it.

"Hearing all of this only makes me wonder how you managed to..."

Su Yang smiled and said, "We go way back."

"Anyways, let's go take a look at the Jaded Garden."

They proceeded to make their way to the Jaded Garden while making sure to stay as far away from the ground as possible to avoid the poison fog just in case the wind carried it.

Sometime later, they arrived at the Jaded Garden.

However, the place looked nothing like it did in Su Yang's memories.

The Jaded Garden used to be filled with natural and exotic plants, but he couldn't even see any plants currently due to a thick black fog enveloping the entire place.

"I thought you were exaggerating about the poison... but heavens... I can feel my lungs burning with every breath I take despite not being anywhere near the poison, and I even have the Hundred Poisons Body that increases my resistance to poison." Su Yang muttered in a dumbfounded voice.

"So is it hopeless?" She then asked.

"Can we protect ourselves using spiritual energy?" Su Yang responded with a question.

"Yes, but even cultivators at Immortal Ascension have trouble keeping their spiritual energy active for more than a few seconds, as the poison fog tears through spiritual energy like a sword tearing through paper."

"As for someone at your level... Your spiritual energy will disappear the moment it even touches the poison gas, so it's not possible if you're thinking about running in there. I haven't tried it, but looking at it now, I think my spiritual energy will last around seven seconds."

"Seven seconds..." Su Yang narrowed his eyes at the Jaded Garden.

He then turned to look at Luo Ziyi and said, "What if you cover the both of us with your spiritual energy?"

"You want me to share my spiritual energy with you? That will definitely shorten the amount of time I can protect us against the poison fog by at least half." Luo Ziyi looked at him with wide eyes.

He nodded and said, "I know this may sound crazy, but I want you to believe in me."

"If we give up now, we can forget about seeing the God of Alchemy until she decides to leave seclusion or I become strong enough to enter, and that might take a few hundred if not thousand years."

"The God of Alchemy and her pills are essential to some of my plans, and if I don't have her assistance before I need them, the majority of my plans will have to be tossed out the window."

"Are you sure we can enter her special place in under three seconds?" Luo Ziyi asked him.

"Yes. I will open up the portal to her place from here, and once it's opened, we only need to fly into it, which won't take more than a second," he said in a confident voice.

"If you say so." Luo Ziyi nodded.

Su Yang then retrieved the ingredients they acquired at the Grand Celestial Plaza and used his alchemy flames to concoct the pill while in the air.

A few minutes later, all nine ingredients were consumed, leaving behind a single semi-transparent pill that looked almost otherworldly.

"Are you ready? I only need to burn this pill and toss it inside the Jaded Garden."

"Give me a moment to prepare," said Luo Ziyi, and then she began releasing her suppressed cultivation base, causing her aura to soar.

—

Chapter 936 Medicine Paradise

Sovereign Spirit Realm... Divine Spirit Realm...

Luo Ziyi's aura skyrocketed the moment she released her suppressed cultivation base.

Divine Lord Realm... Divine Saint Realm...

Ancient Emperor... Ancient Immortal...

1st level Immortal Ascension... second level... fifth level... seventh level...

Luo Ziyi's aura stopped at the ninth level of Immortal Ascension, reaching the peak of Immortals.

Once her cultivation base was no longer suppressed, Luo Ziyi proceeded to spend a couple of minutes gathering her spiritual energy, enhancing and strengthening it.

"Okay, I am ready," she said to him.

Su Yang nodded.

He then lit the pill ablaze with his alchemy flames before crushing the pill and scattering it over the Jaded Garden, making it look like it was raining fire.

The moment the pill disappeared into the Jaded Garden, they could sense a change within the atmosphere there, and somewhere within the thick black fog, they noticed unnatural movements.

Su Yang pointed at that spot and said, "There!"

Luo Ziyi immediately released her spiritual energy and covered both of them with it.

She then grabbed Su Yang before flying at the location with intense speed.

Whoosh!

Their figures quickly disappeared into the black fog.

Su Yang could feel the spiritual energy around them rapidly being destroyed by the black fog, but he wasn't worried that they wouldn't make it.

A second after they dived into the Jaded Garden, their darkened vision suddenly brightened, and they somehow appeared in the sky despite flying towards the ground a second ago.

"Where are we?" Luo Ziyi looked around with interest, feeling as though they'd been transported to another world.

Besides the blue sky, the ground was a seemingly endless plain with countless plants and unique ingredients growing in harmony.

"Heavens... Is that the Moon Blight Flower? How could such a treasure grow in this kind of atmosphere?" Luo Ziyi was shocked when she recognized some of the treasures growing on the ground.

The Moon Blight Flower is a unique treasure that can only be grown in the Sacred Moon Temple, yet there were some in this place that didn't look too special besides the field of precious treasures.

Then Luo Ziyi noticed two large fields separated by two colors— red and blue.

"Is that the Yin Dragon Head Flower and the Yang Dragon Head Flower coexisting right beside each other? How is that possible?"

"Welcome to the God of Alchemy's Medicine Paradise, where pretty much all existing treasures in the form of plants and medicine can be found in this small world. No matter what condition a treasure requires to be born outside, it doesn't apply in this special world." Su Yang said to her.

"All existing treasures? Does this mean even the rarest treasures can be found in this place? Like the Celestial Star Flower?" Luo Ziyi asked.

The Celestial Star Flower is an exceedingly rare treasure that can only be found outside the Four Divine Heavens within small and non-habitable stars floating around in the starry sky. As for its uses, it was the key ingredient to one of the most powerful pills in the world that can assist those at the peak of Immortal Ascension reach the Celestial Realm, essentially becoming a god.

"No matter how many times I come here, it always takes my breath away." Su Yang said with a nostalgic smile on his face.

"If the world learns of such a place, I can imagine the chaos and shock it will create... And it will definitely give birth to many malicious intents," said Luo Ziyi.

And then she continued, "Well... Now that we're here, where do we go from here? Where is the God of Alchemy?"

"She could be anywhere in this small world... or not even here at all. Let's go to the only living quarters available in this place, as that is where she is most likely at," he said.

"Follow me."

Su Yang then began flying in a certain direction, and Luo Ziyi followed him.

As they flew across the plain filled with valuable and even priceless ingredients, Su Yang said, "Also, I forgot to mention this, but be on alert."

"What? Why? Are there spiritual beasts in here?"

"No, but if the God of Alchemy is concocting pills and we accidentally disturb her, she will attack us before knowing our identities."

"...That does sound dangerous."

After recalling the black fog in the Jaded Garden and how it devastated her spiritual energy, Luo Ziyi shivered when she tried to imagine receiving an attack from the God of Alchemy.

A couple of days of flying later, they arrived before two living quarters in a spacious area, and it was the only place that wasn't covered in ingredients in this Medicine Paradise.

"I don't sense her presence." Luo Ziyi said after checking the area with her spiritual sense.

"Hmm... Maybe she's taking care of the ingredients?" Su Yang made a quick guess.

"Should we just wait here?"

He shook his head and said, "When she leaves to take care of the ingredients, she sometimes wouldn't return for months if not years, and since she has decided to hide, chances are she might not return for a much longer time since she doesn't have anything else to do."

"Then what should we do? Should I cause a commotion and let her come to us?" Luo Ziyi asked.

With her cultivation base, making a commotion in such a small world would be as easy as breathing.

"Good idea— making her come to us. But we're not going to make any commotion."

Su Yang then looked around the seemingly endless medicine field and smiled.

"I have an even better idea. Give me a few minutes."

He then proceeded to fly around the area, plucking up random ingredients from the Medicine Paradise, almost like he was weeding the place.

This dumbfounded Luo Ziyi. Hopefully, the God of Alchemy won't mind him stealing her ingredients.

Sometime later, Su Yang returned with a dozen valuable ingredients in his grasp, and he said, "I am going to use these to summon her."

Chapter 937 Summoning the God of Alchemy

"How are you going to summon her with these ingredients?" Luo Ziyi asked him with her eyebrows slightly raised.

"I am going to concoct a pill, and hopefully she notices it and comes here to investigate," he said.

"Huh?" Luo Ziyi still doesn't understand how that is going to summon the God of Alchemy.

"You see, the God of Alchemy has a godlike sense of smell when it comes to ingredients, so no matter where she is in this world, she should be able to smell someone concocting pills in her supposedly secret home."

"Once she smells it, she will immediately come here to investigate it—"

"Provided that she's actually in this world..." Luo Ziyi interrupted.

"Yes, but I am certain that she's in here. Although I wasn't certain before, I am now after coming here."

"What makes you so confident?" she then asked.

"The ingredients have recently been taken care of, and that is only possible if the God of Alchemy is here, and I doubt she had hired someone to take care of the medicine for her."

"She's incredibly stingy and selfish when it comes to her ingredients— almost childishly so, and if you touch her ingredients without receiving her permission, she will make a commotion."

"Uhhh..."

Hearing his words, Luo Ziyi's gaze turned to look at the ingredients in his hands and said, "What happens if someone takes her ingredients without permission?"

Su Yang laughed and said, "Then that person will probably die a horrible death."

And he continued, "Don't worry, nothing will happen to me— I hope."

"You hope?"

"Whether she's in a good mood or not, I guess."

"Anyways, I am going to start concocting the pill now..."

He then paused for a moment and looked at Luo Ziyi with a mysterious look on his face.

"What is it?" Luo Ziyi felt a chill go down her spine when she saw his look.

"Nothing," he said before sitting down on the ground and retrieving a cauldron from his storage ring a moment later.

"..."

Luo Ziyi frowned, feeling something obnoxious in the air for some reason.

'What is he hiding from me?' she wondered inwardly as Su Yang prepared the cauldron.

However, Luo Ziyi would soon find out why Su Yang was hiding from her, and it came sooner than she'd expected.

Once Su Yang heated the cauldron, he began tossing half of the ingredients he'd gathered inside it, and they were all ingredients with weird shapes that she had never seen before.

A few moments after Su Yang began concocting the pill, a foul smell suddenly assaulted Luo Ziyi's nose that caused her to start gagging.

After feeling like she had her breath taken away, she exclaimed with a shocked expression on her face, "What the heck is that foulness?! I have never smelled anything this disgusting before! Not even impurities smell this bad!"

Su Yang burst out laughing after hearing her words.

"I am creating the world's stinkiest pill."

"Damn it, Su Yang! How could you create such an abomination without warning me first?! I will definitely have nightmares about this later! And there's a good chance that I will never forget this smell for the rest of my life!" Luo Ziyi immediately covered herself with spiritual energy, blocking the foul smell from entering her nose, yet she could still somehow smell it.

"Is it really that bad? I have forgotten about it." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Of course, he'd sealed his sense of smell before he started concocting this stink bomb.

Luo Ziyi had a strong urge to give the back of Su Yang's head a powerful slap, but she resisted.

"Ziyi, can you spread the smell?" Su Yang asked her a minute later when the foulness reached its peak.

"Won't the God of Alchemy kill you later for stinking up her precious paradise?"

"Perhaps," he said with a smile on his face, seemingly without a care in the world.

Luo Ziyi shook her head and waved her sleeves, creating a powerful gust of wind that spread the foul smell even further.

"I won't protect you if the God of Alchemy decides to kill you since you deserve it," she said to him afterward.

"I look forward to it," he chuckled.

Meanwhile, somewhere within the Medicine Paradise, a small figure laid on the ground curled up like a ball while surrounded by ingredients, seemingly deep asleep.

This small figure was actually a little girl— one that didn't even look to be in her teenage years.

She had a delicate and small face, her skin was as smooth as jade, and its texture was white like snow.

This incredibly beautiful little girl looked incredibly innocent at glance and would, without a doubt, grow up to be a beautiful woman.

However, her eyes suddenly snapped open when a certain foul smell assaulted her nose.

This little girl then slowly sat up and looked in a certain direction with a deep frown and vicious expression on her delicate face, looking like someone who was prepared to torture someone before killing them.

"Who dares..."

She muttered in a chilling voice that would freeze anyone that heard it.

She then stood up and began flying towards the source of the smell.

"Uhh... I think she's coming..." Luo Ziyi said when she sensed killing intent suddenly appeared very far away from their location.

"Really? That's great."

Su Yang then opened the cauldron and tossed into it the remainder of the ingredients.

A white mist then appeared from the cauldron, quickly cleansing the foul smell in the air.

Of course, Luo Ziyi wasn't aware that he was actually cleaning up the air since she had her sense of smell still sealed.

"Now we wait." Su Yang said as he laid on the ground in a relaxed manner.

Luo Ziyi, however, remained alert, as she was worried that the God of Alchemy might actually attack them on sight due to Su Yang's actions.

"I swear, Su Yang, if I die because of this, I will haunt you in your next life!" Luo Ziyi said to him.

Chapter 938 God of Alchemy

A few hours have passed since Su Yang made his stink bomb and alerted the little girl who had been sleeping peacefully in the Medicine Paradise, yet nobody has shown up.

However, Luo Ziyi could still feel the killing intent quickly approaching their location.

By now, all of the foul smell has already been cleansed by the white mist Su Yang created afterward.

"She's pretty far away, huh?" Su Yang said in a calm voice as he laid on the floor without a care in the world and watched the clouds in this secluded world.

"She should be here in less than an hour," said Luo Ziyi after calculating the God of Alchemy's speed and their distance.

"An hour, huh? I wonder if she's changed," he mumbled in a low voice.

"Changed?" Luo Ziyi raised her eyebrows.

"Well, you're pretty much the same as before. The God of Alchemy, however... I'm worried that she might have changed. The God of Alchemy I knew wouldn't stop concocting pills no matter what, but from what I heard, she has stopped concocting pills for the last couple hundreds of years." Su Yang sighed.

"Yes, and thanks to that, the pill market has exponentially skyrocketed. Some of the rarer pills that only the God of Alchemy can concoct have even become something like an ancient artifact that people are afraid of using, as they fear that once they use it, the pill will disappear forever."

"Hopefully, she will continue to concoct pills, or the Four Divine Heavens will greatly suffer, especially when there is nobody out there that is even half as good as her when it comes to alchemy."

After a moment of silence, Luo Ziyi said, "I have always wondered why the God of Alchemy is so obsessed with alchemy. You got any idea?"

"I don't have the slightest clue. But do people really need a reason to do something they enjoy? I became a dual cultivator for no other reason besides the fact it was enjoyable," he said.

And he continued, "Some people are just born like that."

About an hour later, Luo Ziyi suddenly said, "She's here."

The moment she said such words, the entire atmosphere changed, and immense killing intent filled the place.

When Su Yang felt this killing intent, a bead of sweat appeared on his forehead, and he showed a bittersweet smile on his face.

"She's... really angry..."

"I would be as angry if I learned that someone had released such foul odor within my sanctuary," said Luo Ziyi in a sighing voice.

"Well? Do you think she's going to kill you?"

"Probably." Su Yang chuckled despite their situation.

A few minutes later, a small figure could be seen flying in their direction from the south, but she stopped once she was a few hundred meters away from them.

"Who are you two? And how did you enter this place?" The little girl that is presumably the God of Alchemy spoke in a cold tone that didn't match her innocent voice after she stopped.

As much as she wanted to immediately kill these two that have invaded her sanctuary, even tarnishing it with a foul smell, she needed to know how these two individuals managed to enter her world that she thought was secure and impossible to enter so that she could fix it to prevent future situations like this one.

And before Su Yang could even respond, the God of Alchemy noticed that they were currently under the effects of Flawless Transformation Pills.

Although the Flawless Transformation Pill may work on others, even those at Immortal Ascension, it would never fool the God of Alchemy that created the pill in the first place.

'That's the God of Alchemy? She looks a little bit different than how I'd imagined...' Luo Ziyi was dumbfounded to see a little girl.

While she has never spoken with the God of Alchemy before, she has definitely seen her on multiple occasions, yet she looked nothing like this little girl.

"Thank you for not killing us the moment you see us, Yu Xiang." Su Yang said to her with a smile on his round face, acting as though there was nothing out of the ordinary about the God of Alchemy's appearance.

The God of Alchemy's eyebrows twitched slightly upon hearing this fatty addressing her name so casually.

She then retrieved a pitch-black pill from out of thin air and raised her hand, looking like she was going to throw it at them.

When Su Yang saw the black pill in her hands, his eyes widened with shock, and he quickly said, "Wait! Don't be hasty, Xiang'er!"

The God of Alchemy's movements froze the moment Su Yang called her name in an intimate manner, his tone completely different than before.

"What did you just call me?" She spoke in a cold voice that had a different tone to it, almost like she was shocked.

Su Yang retrieved a pill and quickly swallowed it.

His appearance then began to change itself, returning to its original form.

"It's me, Su Yang."

Su Yang said to her with a gentle smile on his face.

"Su... Yang...?"

The God of Alchemy was so shocked to see his face that she accidentally dropped the black pill in her hands.

Su Yang's eyes widened when he saw this, and he quickly warned Luo Ziyi before turning around and flying away.

"Run! That's the poison fog!"

"What?!"

Luo Ziyi exclaimed before following him.

BOOM!

The black pill exploded into a massive black fog when it touched the ground that quickly enveloped the God of Alchemy's small figure.

"Is she okay?" Luo Ziyi asked once they were far enough from the black fog that consumed the God of Alchemy and the living quarters there.

The black fog was so thick that they couldn't see anything inside even with their spiritual sense.

"That poison looks even more powerful than the one covering the Jaded Garden... I hope she's okay..." Luo Ziyi spoke again after a moment of silence.

Chapter 939 Take Responsibility

"Xiang'er, are you okay?!" Su Yang called out to her.

It would be ridiculous if the God of Alchemy were to die in such a dumb fashion.

However, just as Su Yang began sweating profusely, another explosion resounded as a massive white fog appeared from within the black fog, quickly consuming the darkness.

The white fog subsided a moment later, revealing the God of Alchemy's small figure once again, and she looked completely unharmed.

Su Yang released a sigh of relief after seeing that she was okay.

The God of Alchemy then turned to look at Su Yang in a slow and stiff movement, her gaze still filled with disbelief and shock.

She then began to approach them.

"Are you... really Su Yang?" She asked him in a low voice.

Su Yang spread his arms apart and said, "Why don't you take a look for yourself? You should be able to tell whether I am still disguised or not."

"And how else would I know about this place, much less enter it? Do you remember when I studied alchemy under you in this place?"

"How you would always call me useless when I concocted a bad pill? Or how you would scold me for burning a pill, saying it's a waste of resources?"

The God of Alchemy's small body visibly trembled after Su Yang spoke, and memories of their times together began flashing through her mind.

"Su Yang..."

The God of Alchemy suddenly rushed forward and flew into Su Yang's embrace.

However, she didn't stop even when she was in his embrace, and she continued to push forward until Su Yang could no longer move back because his body was already laying on the ground.

"It's been a while, Xiang'er..." Su Yang said to her in a gentle voice as he hugged her small and seemingly delicate body, almost like a father hugging his daughter.

"How...? Why...? Where...?"

There were so many questions in the God of Alchemy's mind that she only managed to utter these words after trying to speak.

"I will tell you all about it later. For now, let's just stay like this for a while..." Su Yang said to her.

The God of Alchemy nodded her head and silently laid on his body while he embraced her.

Luo Ziyi watched them from above with a dumbfounded look on her face.

According to the stories she has heard about the God of Alchemy from others, she didn't seem the type to act so passionately.

Heartless. Uncaring. Nonchalant.

These were common words that would come out whenever one talked about the God of Alchemy, yet all she could see at this moment was a lonely little girl who looked like she just found her father after losing him in the crowd.

This made Luo Ziyi question whether she was really the God of Alchemy or the God of Alchemy's daughter.

Su Yang and the God of Alchemy remained in their position for well over an hour before Su Yang finally said, "Okay, let's talk now."

The God of Alchemy nodded her head and stood up a moment later.

Once Su Yang stood up, she held onto his hand, almost like she was afraid that she'd lose him again.

"Let's go somewhere more appropriate," he said.

They then went back to the living quarters.

Once they were inside, Su Yang took a seat by the table and Luo Ziyi sat on the other side of the table.

As for the God of Alchemy, she sat directly on Su Yang's lap like a child.

'She's really just like a child... Hard to believe that she's the God of Alchemy.' Luo Ziyi thought to herself.

When Su Yang saw the way Luo Ziyi looked at the God of Alchemy, he smiled and said, "This isn't her original appearance. She's disguised just like you."

"What? Why?" Luo Ziyi became even more confused upon hearing this.

Why would the God of Alchemy disguise herself as a little girl?

"Because it's easier for her to move around... At least that's what she told me before," he said a moment later since the God of Alchemy didn't respond to her.

"Anyways, let me tell you everything." Su Yang said, and he proceeded to explain the situation to the God of Alchemy.

Why he suddenly disappeared— or died. What happened in the Eternal Retribution Cliff. Where he has been for the last two thousand years.

The God of Alchemy listened to everything in silence.

"Do you have any questions?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

After a moment of silence, she shook her head.

"Good... Then let me start asking you questions now, and I have plenty." Su Yang said to her.

Seeing her nod, Su Yang began questioning her.

"I heard that you'd stopped concocting pills, even abandoning your sect to seclude yourself in this place. Why? I cannot imagine the God of Alchemy retiring from alchemy."

"...Because I couldn't concoct any pills," she said in a low voice.

"Eh? What do you mean by that? Can you elaborate a little more?"

"After learning that you'd died, I could no longer concoct any pills. Every time I tried, it would result in a failure because I can't keep focused since it reminds me of you, so I eventually stopped concocting pills," she said in a calm voice, yet one could feel sadness from it.

Su Yang was speechless. He didn't think that this would be the reason why she stopped concocting pills.

"Even if you can no longer concoct pills, why did you abandon your sect? You don't need to be able to concoct pills to manage the sect. I can only imagine the despair your disciples felt when you suddenly disappeared." Su Yang sighed.

"Because whenever I saw the sect elders teaching their disciples, it would remind me of our time together, so I left that place and came here," she responded.

The God of Alchemy then lifted her head to look at his face and said, "Su Yang, you're the reason I couldn't do alchemy for the last two thousand years. Take responsibility."

Chapter 940 Pill Basemen

"T-Take responsibility? What do you want me to do? You cannot blame me for what happened! Blame that old man for reincarnating me without asking my permission!" Su Yang exclaimed.

"And now that I am back, you should be able to concoct pills again, right?"

"I want you to take responsibility by giving me your Family Seal." The God of Alchemy said, taking them by surprise.

"What? My Family Seal? I asked you before, but you refused. Why would you suddenly want it now?" Su Yang said with his eyebrows raised.

"I refused to accept your Family Seal before because I didn't want it to affect my alchemy... No, I was afraid that if I'd accepted it, my love for alchemy would dwindle since I would love you more, and I couldn't bear the thought of loving something else more than alchemy, which has been the sole purpose of my life."

"But when you died... I realized that my love for you had already surpassed alchemy. I just didn't realize it before you died... Or maybe I didn't want to realize it, so I purposefully ignored it— fooling myself into believing that I still love alchemy more."

A gentle smile appeared on Su Yang's face after hearing her reasoning, and he said, "Silly Xiang'er, you could simply love the both of us equally just like how I love everyone in my family equally. There's no need for you to split your love. Of course, it's also okay if you love one more than the other. It's not like you will stop loving the other because you love one more than the other."

The God of Alchemy nodded and said, "Okay. I will try to love you and alchemy equally."

"Alright. I will give you my Family Seal later." Su Yang then said.

Luo Ziyi was speechless. The God of Alchemy is going to join the Su Family? This was too sudden even for her.

After a moment of silence, the God of Alchemy asked, "Su Yang, what are you going to do now? Did you come here just to tell me that you're still alive?"

"Well, that is certainly one of the reasons why I came here, but I have other reasons as well. I need your help. As you can see, I have to start from scratch because of my reincarnation."

"I plan on joining the Boundless Yin Yang Sect to increase my cultivation base, and I will need your pills to make sure that nobody will learn about my return before I am completely prepared— along with other things."

The God of Alchemy nodded and said, "Okay."

"What kind of pills do you need?" she then asked him.

Su Yang then retrieved a long list from his storage ring and showed it to her.

There were over a hundred different kinds of pills listed there.

Luo Ziyi shook her head and said, "As expected of a shameless man, asking for so many pills at once. I don't even want to know how much that list would've cost you if you had to buy it yourself."

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I definitely wouldn't be able to afford it in my current state, and even you would have trouble paying for it."

The God of Alchemy took a moment to look at the list before nodding her head, "Okay. I have the majority of them in my storage, but I will have to concoct the others."

"Thank you, Xiang'er. You're a lifesaver."

The God of Alchemy, Yu Xiang, then jumped off his lap and said, "Follow me."

Su Yang and Luo Ziyi proceeded to follow her to another room in the building that led them to a staircase that went down.

At the end of the stair was another room— a massive basement with countless shelves placed neatly beside each other, almost like a library of sorts.

But instead of books occupying these shelves, it was filled with pill bottles, kind of like a wine cellar.

"Wow... This place looks like an expensive pill store..." Luo Ziyi was surprised by the location.

However, her surprise grew into shock when she read some of the labels on these pill bottles.

"Celestial Star Pill?! And there are so many bottles!" Luo Ziyi exclaimed in a shocked voice.

A single Celestial Star Pill would go for millions of flawless-quality Spirit Jade, yet there was an entire shelf full of them right in front of her very eyes, and it was close enough for her to reach!

The other shelves were no different, as all of them had incredibly valuable and priceless pills on display!

This basement was definitely a priceless treasury! A paradise for alchemists!

The longer Luo Ziyi stayed inside this place and the more pills she saw, the more she was shocked by the existence of this basement.

If the world somehow learns of this world that is filled with priceless ingredients, much less this basement that is filled with priceless pills, there would definitely be people risking their lives to invade this place.

And as much as she wanted to snatch a few pill bottles from this place, Luo Ziyi resisted her urges and followed Yu Xiang with Su Yang, who appeared to be quite calm.

"Just like the ingredients outside, I am always left speechless every time I visit this place no matter how many times I experience it," said Su Yang.

He then took a deep breath and continued, "This place also smells great. It has a unique smell that you cannot find outside since this is the only place in the universe with such a massive collection of precious pills."

"If you want, you can take some of them. I have no use for them, anyway," Yu Xiang said in a nonchalant voice.

"Are you trying to spoil me?" Su Yang said with a smile on his face, and he continued, "It's fine. I will only take what I absolutely need, and I will definitely repay you in the future for your help."

Chapter 941 Unique Alchemy Flames

After spending about half an hour inside Yu Xiang's pill basement collecting the pills Su Yang needed for his journey, they left the basement and went back outside.

"I will go look for the ingredients needed to concoct the rest of the pills. Give me a few days," she said to him.

Su Yang nodded and then said, "Oh, right. If you don't mind, can you gather these ingredients for me as well?"

He then handed her another list of ingredients, but this list already had a couple of ingredients crossed out.

When Yu Xiang saw this recipe, she raised her eyebrows. Clearly, she knew what he was trying to concoct just by looking at the recipe.

"Do you want me to help you concoct this pill as well?" She suddenly asked him.

"No, I can concoct that pill by myself," he said.

"Okay. Then I will be back." Yu Xiang said before flying away, but she would turn around to look at him once every few seconds until she could no longer see him.

"What kind of pill are you trying to concoct?" Luo Ziyi asked him out of curiosity.

"It's a pill that fixes infertility," he said.

"What?" Luo Ziyi's eyes widened slightly.

"Su Liqing cannot give birth no matter how many times we tried, so I am concocting this pill for her," he explained.

"I see... So she was infertile, huh."

"Anyway, the God of Alchemy is nothing like I had expected. I know that her childish appearance isn't her real appearance, but she sometimes feels quite childish, especially the way she speaks."

Su Yang laughed out loud and said, "Yes, she's quite unique."

A few days later, Yu Xiang returned to the house with a bunch of ingredients in her grasp.

She then took a seat in front of the buildings and retrieved her cauldron.

"Watching the God of Alchemy concoct pills... I wonder how many people would kill just to witness it." Luo Ziyi mumbled as they watched from the sidelines.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Don't blink or you'll miss it."

"Huh?"

Just as she said that, Yu Xiang tossed a couple of the ingredients inside the cauldron without heating up the cauldron first like one normally would.

She then summoned her alchemy flames that looked very familiar to Su Yang.

"What beautiful alchemy flames..." Luo Ziyi was immediately mesmerized by the azure-colored flames—the same ones used by Zhu Mengyi.

Of course, Yu Xiang's mastery and control with the Azure Flames was incomparably superior, reaching beyond perfection.

In less than a second, the cauldron heated up, melting the ingredients inside.

Yu Xiang then used another second to shape the pill before using a few more seconds to complete the pill and taking it out of the cauldron.

In just a couple of seconds, Yu Xiang has managed to concoct one of the most difficult pills in existence, and the pill even came out in flawless quality.

This left Luo Ziyi speechless. Although she was not an alchemy master, she knew the basics, and she has never heard of someone concocting a pill with such speed and perfection before, much less witnessing it herself.

After she retrieved the pill, Yu Xiang placed it inside a pill bottle before sealing it and tossing it to Su Yang.

And then she immediately began concocting the next pill.

Once she placed the ingredients inside the cauldron, Yu Xiang summoned her alchemy flames again, but they were a different color— an entirely different type of alchemy flames.

Luo Ziyi wasn't surprised at all when she saw this, since she knew that there were people out there who could use more than one unique alchemy flame at once, so it wasn't mindblowing that the God of Alchemy, who is supposedly the best alchemy master in the world, could use more than one unique alchemy flames.

However, she was curious how many unique alchemy flames the God of Alchemy had, so she asked Su Yang, "Do you know how many unique alchemy flames she can use?"

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "Take a guess."

"..."

Luo Ziyi pondered for a moment before speaking, "I know the Sect Master of the Spirit Cauldron Sect can use 13 different alchemy flames, and he's regarded as one of the top alchemy masters in the Four Divine Heavens. If I have to guess, she knows around 20 to 30 different alchemy flames?"

"Not even close," said Su Yang.

And he continued, "She can use every single alchemy flame out there. In other words, she can use all of them."

"All of them...?" Luo Ziyi was left speechless by this revelation.

There were hundreds if not thousands of unique alchemy flames out there. How can a single individual possibly use all of them?

"She's not called the youngest and most accomplished God of Alchemy for a reason. Of course, not many people know that she can use all the unique alchemy flames out there." Su Yang chuckled.

While Su Yang and Luo Ziyi spoke with each other, Yu Xiang had already finished concocting the remaining pills Su Yang needed for his journey, and she had used a different alchemy flame for every pill she concocted.

"Congratulations, Xiang'er. Looks like you can concoct pills again." Su Yang said to her afterward.

"In fact, I think you've even improved since the last time I saw your skills."

"Here are your pills." Yu Xiang handed the pill bottles to him.

"Thank you."

Su Yang quickly tossed them inside his storage ring, feeling extremely confident in his plans now that he has Yu Xiang's unrivaled pills.

"Also, these are the ingredients for your pill." Yu Xiang pointed at the leftovers.

Now that he has all of the necessary ingredients, Su Yang can finally concoct the pill that will cure Su Liqing's infertility.

"Now that I have everything I need... Do you want to work on the Family Seal?" Su Yang asked Yu Xiang, who nodded her head in a calm yet eager manner.

Chapter 942 Most Powerful Alchemy Flames in the Universe

"I'll see you later." Su Yang said to Luo Ziyi before heading upstairs with Yu Xiang following behind him.

'Is he going to cultivate with her in that appearance?' Luo Ziyi couldn't help but wonder as she watched Yu Xiang's childish figure follow Su Yang up the stairs.

Compared to Xiao Rong's petite figure, Yu Xiang's appearance definitely looked younger, and some would even argue illegal as well.

Once they entered Yu Xiang's room, Su Yang laid on her bed and watched as Yu Xiang climbed onto the bed with him.

However, they didn't immediately cultivate, and Yu Xiang laid beside Su Yang.

They silently stared at the ceiling for a few minutes before Yu Xiang spoke, "Su Yang... I missed you..."

"I missed you as well, Xiang'er."

Yu Xiang then stood up on the bed and sat on his pelvis area.

"I want to love you and alchemy equally, but I think that's impossible since my feelings for you seemingly continue to grow endlessly. However, I think I am also fine with that."

She leaned her small body until her lips were touching his lips.

After a quick and gentle kiss on the lips, she sat back up and began loosening her robes, revealing her immature body.

"You're going to cultivate in that appearance?" Su Yang asked her with raised eyebrows.

Yu Xiang then retrieved a white pill before putting it inside her mouth in a seducing manner.

After crunching on the pill a few times, her small figure began growing larger— until she was a full-fledged mature woman with two large and beautifully shaped breasts only a few inches away from Su Yang's face.

Yu Xiang's long black hair flowed down her naked back like a river, and Su Yang could feel two round and soft buttocks pressing against his legs.

Her overall blossoming figure resembled Wang Shuren's mature body, but her assets were larger overall, especially her breasts.

With such monsters on her chest, one would understand why she would prefer a childish appearance if they saw it.

After returning to her original appearance, Yu Xiang lowered her body again.

However, this time, Yu Xiang didn't kiss Su Yang. Instead, she pressed her large breasts against Su Yang's face and said, "You liked it when I did this before, right?"

Su Yang chuckled, "I still do."

He then moved his arms and used his claw-like hands to grope her large breasts, feeling as though he was massaging heaven itself.

After massaging her breasts for a few moments, Su Yang opened his mouth and began sucking on the pink and erected tips on her breasts.

Sometime later, Yu Xiang turned her body around and began loosening the lower part of his clothes.

Seeing Yu Xiang's peerlessly round buttocks, Su Yang immediately grabbed it and pulled it towards his face.

He then extended his tongue and began licking the slit that had pink meat inside.

Meanwhile, Yu Xiang pulled out a stiff rod from within Su Yang's robes and took a deep breath.

A euphoric look appeared on Yu Xiang's face, looking like she was obsessed with the smell of his meatstick.

Once her nose was satisfied, Yu Xiang opened her mouth and gobbled up the entire rod with ease.

Sloppy noises quickly filled the room.

In response to Yu Xiang's delightful mouth techniques, Su Yang inserted his tongue deep inside her lower mouth that was drooling with saliva.

Unfortunately, just like the case with Luo Ziyi, his cultivation base was too low to benefit from Yu Xiang's Yin Qi, so he could only consume them without absorbing its effects.

After spending many minutes in this position, Yu Xiang stood up with her little sister dripping wet.

"Are you ready?" Su Yang asked her.

Seeing her nod, Su Yang smiled.

He then summoned his alchemy flames, enveloping his rod with it.

Yu Xiang's eyes flickered with excitement when she saw his flaming rod.

"You like this, right?" He said with a slight chuckle at the end.

Yu Xiang nodded eagerly before squatting down, inserting his flaming rod deep inside her lower mouth, feeling something incredibly hard and hot poking the end of her cave a moment later.

Yu Xiang's eyes slightly rolled back when she felt an intense feeling of satisfaction and pleasure gush into her body during the moment of penetration.

Once Yu Xiang snapped out of her daze, she started moving her hips, riding Su Yang as though he was a horse.

Sometime later, Yu Xiang decided to summon her alchemy flames as well, engulfing the inside of her cave with a sea of unique alchemy flames, and flames of multiple colors began gushing from her cave.

Blue, red, yellow, green— it was as though her lower mouth was spewing rainbow flames.

Su Yang's body trembled with delight when he suddenly felt an indescribable feeling overwhelm his sword, sending little lightning snakes in every corner of his body.

The only person who could possibly use such a technique in the Four Divine Heavens was definitely Yu Xiang, who has mastered all the unique alchemy flames in the world.

She was so proficient with the unique alchemy flames that she could even combine all of them together, creating an entirely new type of unique flames that could be considered the most powerful alchemy flames in the universe.

However, instead of using this type of heaven-defying alchemy flame to concoct pills, Yu Xiang used it to satisfy her lover in bed.

If the alchemy masters in the Four Divine Heavens were to somehow learn of this, they would definitely die of envy and shock.

Su Yang quickly began sweating when Yu Xiang began using her technique. Although he was able to handle it perfectly before, he was no longer in the same body, and even his endurance to pleasure was no longer as powerful as before. Therefore, he could only enjoy Yu Xiang's heavenly flames for a few seconds before tapping out and releasing a load of Yang Qi inside her cave.

"This is the first time I have defeated you in bed," she said with him with a somewhat smug look on her face.

And she continued, "Now when will you defeat me in alchemy?"

Chapter 943 Cheating

"This doesn't count! How can you be so shameless, Xiang'er? You're an Immortal whilst I am still only at the Sovereign Spirit Realm. No matter how experienced I am, the difference is too big. Let me recover at least half of my strength before you challenge me!" Su Yang said with a bittersweet smile on his face.

And he continued, "And there's no way I can defeat you in alchemy— not even if I trained under you for another million years."

Yu Xiang then responded with a smile on her face, "No excuses, Su Yang. A defeat is a defeat. If you don't want to admit defeat, then I will force you to admit defeat!"

She then summoned her alchemy flames and began riding his stiff rod again.

Su Yang's body trembled with pleasure again, and he said with an adamant smile on his face, "Don't underestimate me!"

He got up from the bed and pinned Yu Xiang's beautiful body onto the bed, before using Myriad of Transformations to enlarge his rod and thrusting it inside her body, instantly gaining control of the flow.

Yu Xiang's body shook with pleasure, and her lower mouth began spraying out Yin Qi when Su Yang continuously poked her weak spot with his enlarged rod.

If it was the other ladies from the other world, they would've definitely lost consciousness by now.

However, Yu Xiang was an immortal with incredible endurance levels, especially since she tempered her body with countless precious pills. Although her body was screaming with pleasure and her cave was gushing with Yin Qi, she was nowhere near exhausted or ready to give up.

In fact, Yu Xiang had so much energy that she'd decided to concoct a pill while Su Yang pleased her body!

After taking out the ingredients from her storage ring, Yu Xiang concocted a couple of pills without needing any cauldron.

A few seconds later, Yu Xiang consumed the pills she'd just freshly concocted.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows when he recognized the pills she consumed.

"That's definitely cheating."

Su Yang didn't know whether to laugh or cry after seeing her consume these pills that not only increased her stamina but also improved her endurance.

Furthermore, since they were pills concocted by the God of Alchemy herself, its effects would naturally be much stronger than normal.

"You're using your dual cultivation skills, yet I cannot use my alchemy skills? You're the shameless one, Su Yang," she said with a smile.

"I guess I can't really argue against that..." Su Yang wasn't the least angry about the situation.

In fact, he has long gotten used to Yu Xiang acting in such a manner, as this was not their first time cultivating with each other.

The two of them continued to cultivate with each other like this for the entire week until Su Yang could no longer physically or mentally continue, and for the first time since his reincarnation, Su Yang had suffered complete defeat by Yu Xiang's immortal body that was supported by her godlike pills.

Cultivating with Yu Xiang was so exhausting that it couldn't even compare to when he cultivated with tens of thousands of cultivators without any breaks at the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Okay, I surrender. You win this time, Xiang'er." Su Yang collapsed onto the bed with his body soaked in sweat and Yin Qi.

"However, I will definitely return this favor in the future when I regain my strength— tenfold," he said with a grin on his face.

Yu Xiang laid beside him with her cave flowing with Yang Qi, and she said in a low voice, "I cannot wait."

After resting for a few hours, Yu Xiang suddenly said, "Want to go again?"

"Just a little more, okay?"

"Okay."

Thus, they began cultivating again, and they ended up continuing for another week.

In the end, Su Yang activated the Family Seal on Yu Xiang's body. As for where the Family Seal appeared— it appeared on her chest.

Once they cleaned up the mess, Su Yang said, "Xiang'er, I have another favor to ask of you."

"What is it?" Yu Xiang asked him as she consumed a pill that transformed her back to her childish body.

"There are two people within the family that would like to study alchemy under you. Can you teach them for a bit?" Su Yang finally decided to tell her about Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua.

"You want me to accept disciples? You know I don't like teaching people since it takes away from my time. Of course, you were an exception," she said with a slight frown on her face.

Despite having a sect of her own, Yu Xiang doesn't actually teach any of the disciples, as that was the sect elders' responsibility.

In fact, her sect was a one-of-a-kind place where the Sect Master doesn't really engage with the sect or its disciple. Yu Xiang's role as a Sect Master was mostly in name with the sect elders doing most of the work.

Despite the lack of involvement from the Sect Master, the sect is still one of the most successful and powerful sects within the Four Divine Heavens simply because of Yu Xiang's status as the God of Alchemy.

Even if she doesn't do anything, her name alone could carry an entire sect to the peak of the Four Divine Heavens.

"Of course, that's why I am only asking you. If you don't want to teach them, I will try to look for other ways to help them. They're very passionate about alchemy, after all."

Yu Xiang stared at him in silence for a moment before speaking, "Since I am now part of the family, I should at the very least give them a chance."

And she continued, "I will teach them for one month as a trial, but if they don't show any promise or waste my time, I will immediately send them away. If you agree to this term, I will teach them."

Su Yang nodded, "I expected you would say something like this. In fact, I even brought them here with me, so you can speak with them yourself."

Chapter 944 One Month Trial

"What do you mean you brought them here?" Yu Xiang asked him.

"You'll understand in a minute."

Sometime later, Su Yang and Yu Xiang went downstairs, but Luo Ziyi was nowhere to be seen.

Of course, they didn't expect her to sit around until they were finished.

However, without Luo Ziyi around, Su Yang wouldn't be able to call out Bai Lihua and Wang Shuren.

They then went outside to see if they could find Luo Ziyi outside, and sure enough, they found Luo Ziyi wandering around the ingredient fields, seemingly taking her time looking through every ingredient that was there, almost as though she was in a flower field.

"Ziyi!" Su Yang called out to her.

Once Luo Ziyi returned, she said, "You're done already? I was expecting to wait another week or two."

Su Yang nodded, and he said, "Yes, we are done, and I told her about Bai Lihua and Wang Shuren. Can you summon the spatial device so that she could speak with them?"

Luo Ziyi then summoned the Immortal's Treasury before teleporting Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua outside without needing to go inside. Of course, she made sure to warn them before she teleported them—without telling them the purpose of taking them outside.

A moment later, two beautiful women appeared before Luo Ziyi like ghosts.

"Su Yang? Did something happen?" Bai Lihua asked him after seeing his handsome face.

He nodded with a smile, "The God of Alchemy would like to speak with you two."

"The God of Alchemy?! Where?!" Wang Shuren immediately began looking around with a crazed look on her face, completely unaware that she was already standing right before the God of Alchemy.

"I am the God of Alchemy," Yu Xiang said a moment later.

"What?"

Both Bai Lihua and Wang Shuren turned to look at the little girl standing beside Su Yang, and their eyes widened with disbelief when they realized that she was the one who just claimed to be the God of Alchemy.

"She's the God of Alchemy? Is this some kind of joke that you're playing on us, Su Yang?" Wang Shuren asked him, as she was having a hard time believing that such a young girl could possibly be the God of Alchemy.

Su Yang smiled and said, "You should know by now that one's appearance in the cultivation world can be extremely deceiving, especially since you're an alchemy master. What you're seeing right now is merely a disguise caused by a pill."

"I-I'm sorry. Please forgive my rudeness just now, Senior God of Alchemy." Wang Shuren quickly lowered her head and apologized to Yu Xiang upon realizing her mistake.

"You can address me as Senior Xiang," she said in a nonchalant voice.

If Wang Shuren hadn't apologized to her, perhaps she would've been a little upset.

"Anyways, Su Yang told me that you both wanted to study under me, is that correct?" Yu Xiang then asked them.

"That is correct, Senior Xiang. We hope to study alchemy under you." They both responded simultaneously, almost like they'd practiced this before.

Yu Xiang then said, "I don't know if Su Yang told you this or not, but I hate having disciples, as that takes away my time from alchemy. However, since you're now my family and Su Yang asked for this favor, I have decided to give you both a chance."

"One month— I will give you one month to prove yourself worthy to study under me. I don't mean to brag, but countless alchemy masters out there would kill to study under me regardless if they are the worst alchemy master or the second-best in the Four Divine Heavens."

"During this month, I will test your talents and continue to push your limits every day until you give up or die. I will make you undergo countless trials that will be far above what you're capable of."

"If you succeed and pass my trials, I will officially accept you as my disciple and train you into the best alchemy masters in the Four Divine Heaven— only below me, of course. However, like I'd already said, you will undergo harsh trials that might even kill you."

"If you're willing to risk your life to study under me, raise your hand."

Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua immediately raised their hands without hesitation.

Su Yang has already warned them that studying under the God of Alchemy would be incredibly harsh and seemingly impossible at first, and they might even lose their lives.

However, they didn't want to fall behind Su Yang and everyone else in this new world that's far more profound than even beyond their imaginations.

"Then we will spend a month in this place. If you pass, I will take you to my sect, where you'll compete against the other disciples while studying under me. If you fail... I will return you to Luo Ziyi here. Do you have any questions or problems?" Yu Xiang asked them.

They shook their heads.

"Good. Then we will start next week." Yu Xiang said.

She then turned to look at Su Yang and said, "I will spend another month in this place before I return to the sect and start concocting pills again."

"As long as you return to concocting pills," he said with a smile.

"Su Yang! Make sure you visit us from time to time, okay?" Wang Shuren suddenly said to him.

"It's going to be difficult traveling anywhere once I join the Boundless Yin Yang Sect, but I will try my best to visit you all once in a while," he said.

"It's a promise." Bai Lihua said.

"Of course."

"Stay safe, Su Yang." Wang Shuren said to him, and she continued, "I will definitely overcome this trial, and then I am going to surpass you one day."

"I look forward to that day," he smiled.

"Oh, right." Su Yang suddenly looked at Yu Xiang and said, "I almost forgot. The black fog covering the Jaded Garden. Can you get rid of it? It's causing trouble for the cities nearby, and according to what I heard, it even killed more than just a few people."

Chapter 945 Celestial Yang Qi

"Okay," Yu Xiang nodded in a calm manner, seemingly undisturbed despite hearing that she'd killed innocent people with her black fog.

This sent chills down Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua's spine.

They thought Su Yang was exaggerating when he said that Yu Xiang was a cold individual who didn't care about anything else besides alchemy. Looking at her now, they silently prayed for their future as her disciples.

"Are you going to leave now, Su Yang?" Yu Xiang asked him sometime later.

"Yes. Now that I have pretty much everything I need for my journey, I will go join the Boundless Yin Yang Sect to increase my cultivation base. It's still probably going to take a couple of years before I can regain some of my original strength, but the Boundless Yin Yang Sect is pretty much the best sect for dual cultivators in the Four Divine Heavens... Unless something changed while I was away."

"Okay. I will see you later then." Yu Xiang said to him.

"..."

They have only been with Yu Xiang for a few minutes, but Wang Shuren and Bai Lihua could tell that Yu Xiang was an entirely different individual whenever she spoke with Su Yang.

The difference was shockingly vast as well.

"Good luck, Lihua. Good luck, Shuren."

Su Yang then gave each of them a hug and passionate kiss before leaving the Medicine Paradise with Luo Ziyi.

Of course, Yu Xiang had to go outside first to cleanse the black fog that covered the Jaded Garden. If Su Yang and Luo Ziyi went outside still with the black fog there, their lives would immediately be in danger.

Once she cleansed the Jaded Garden, returning it to its former glory, Yu Xiang returned to the Medicine Paradise.

"The plants are unharmed despite being consumed by the poisonous fog?" Luo Ziyi was shocked when she saw how the Jaded Garden remained untouched despite spending a few hundred years surrounded by one of the most powerful poisons within the Four Divine Heavens.

Logically speaking, all of the plants here should've withered away by the poison, yet there doesn't appear to be any damages done to the place.

Su Yang smiled and said, "One thing about Xiang'er is that she doesn't like to waste or hurt ingredients even if they're just ordinary plants. While her pills have harmed a lot of people, I cannot recall an instance where her pills have affected the environment or the plants there."

Luo Ziyi was speechless after hearing his words.

To create the world's most powerful poison was already incredible enough, but to think that she'd managed to make the most powerful poison in the world that doesn't hurt the environment was simply astonishing.

"The God of Alchemy... What an unfathomable individual. I look forward to our future together," she said with a smile on her face a moment later.

"Anyways, what now? Are you going to go straight to the Boundless Yin Yang Sect now?" Luo Ziyi then asked him.

"I would like to join them as soon as possible, but I need to see whether they are in their disciple recruitment period or not. If I recall correctly, the Boundless Yin Yang Sect only recruits disciples once every ten years. Hopefully, their recruitment period is soon, or I will have to think of something else."

"Can't you just go to other dual cultivation sects? The Boundless Yin Yang Sect isn't the only one out there. Although they may be powerful, there are other dual cultivation sects as powerful if not even more powerful than them in the Four Divine Heavens."

"Or is there a specific reason why you must go to the Boundless Yin Yang Sect?"

Su Yang looked at the clear blue sky for a moment before speaking, "The Boundless Yin Yang Immortal Caves. The Boundless Yin Yang Sect is the only place with such a unique place, and I'd like to temper my body there."

"Although I can increase my cultivation base anywhere, I can only temper my body and Yang Qi to an extreme degree at the Boundless Yin Yang Sect."

"The Boundless Yin Yang Immortal Caves... I think I have heard of that place before. It's a natural spot where it occasionally spews out Celestial Yang Qi and Celestial Yin Qi, right?"

"Yes, that's right. Although the Celestial Yang Qi will benefit any man, it will benefit men with Celestial Qi even more."

Just like how there is ordinary Profound Qi and Celestial Qi, there was ordinary Yang Qi and Celestial Yang Qi.

Celestial Yang Qi is basically a superior version of Extreme Yang Qi, but unlike Extreme Yang Qi, one cannot cultivate Celestial Yang Qi naturally, meaning that no matter how hard one trains, one will never be able to use Celestial Yang Qi.

In his previous life, Su Yang was only able to make his Yang Qi into Extreme Yang Qi, as he didn't have any Celestial Qi in his body, making it impossible for him to acquire Celestial Yang Qi regardless of how talented he was.

However, that was not the case anymore. Now that his body contains Celestial Qi, even if it's only a small amount, he would be able to cultivate the Celestial Yang Qi and surpass his old self.

This possibility made Su Yang incredibly excited for his future, but in order to acquire Celestial Yang Qi, he must first enter the Boundless Yin Yang Sect.

"Let's go to Marital Heaven, shall we?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

She nodded.

They proceeded to make their way back to the capital city of Jade Heaven, Divine Jade City.

Once they arrived, they paid for three tickets to Martial Heaven, not even bothering to hide Xiao Rong this time.

After waiting for a few hours for the destination to rotate to Marital Heaven, they entered the teleport formation and left Jade Heaven.

The Martial Heaven was quite far away from the Jade Heaven— almost twice as far when comparing the distance between Jade Heaven and Celestial Heaven, so it took them twice as long to reach the other side of the wormhole.

A week later, they arrived at the capital city of Martial Heaven— Martial God City.

Chapter 946 A New Plan

The moment Su Yang and Luo Ziyi arrived at Martial Heaven, they could feel a major difference in the quality of Profound Qi in the air.

Compared to the Jade Heaven and the Celestial Heaven, the quality of Profound Qi in Martial Heaven was vastly superior— almost incomparable.

This is one of the major reasons why Martial Heaven is always ranked first in terms of prowess and also why most of the top sects within the Four Divine Heavens are located at Martial Heaven.

"Where to now?" Luo Ziyi asked him shortly after they arrived at Martial God City.

"There should be an area specifically for information brokers a couple of minutes from this place. Let's go see when the last disciple examination was for the Boundless Yin Yang Sect," he said.

They proceeded to make their way to this location with information brokers.

Once they arrived at the area, they could see multiple information stores set up on the same street.

Su Yang picked one of them and went inside with Luo Ziyi.

"How may I help you?"

The middle-aged man working inside the store asked them.

"I want some information about the Boundless Yin Yang Sect. When was the last time they hosted their disciple examination?" Su Yang asked the man.

The man proceeded to give them a price for the information, and after Su Yang handed over the fee, the man spoke, "They had a disciple examination just last year."

Su Yang frowned when he heard this, as this meant that the Boundless Yin Yang Sect wouldn't be accepting new disciples for another nine years.

And as much as he wanted to wait, he simply couldn't wait nine years to join the sect, as he had an appointment with Tang Lingxi in nine years, and the place they were supposed to meet wasn't a place he could enter at his current level.

"Nine years... What now?" Luo Ziyi asked him.

"Let's go somewhere more private first," he said.

Sometime later, they rented a room in some random hotel.

The first thing Luo Ziyi did was conceal the entire room with a formation.

Su Yang then sat down on the bed with a somewhat exhausted-looking expression on his face.

"If only I'd returned a year earlier..." he sighed out loud.

"Nine years may be a short time in my eyes, but to you... It's probably too long to wait, huh?" Luo Ziyi said to him.

"Yes, way too long. I have to meet up with Lingxi in nine years, or she'll hurt herself, even risking death..." He sighed.

"Sister Lingxi? Why don't you have one of us meet her in your stead?" Luo Ziyi suggested.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "That won't work. Lingxi is a stern individual who won't believe anything from anyone unless she sees it for herself. And the location we're supposed to meet up isn't a place I want any of you to traverse. It's too dangerous."

"Then what are you going to do? Are there any ways for you to enter the Boundless Yin Yang Sect without taking the disciple examination? I know many sects out there have made exceptions and accepted disciples even after the disciple examination ended. The Boundless Yin Yang Sect shouldn't be any different."

"There are certainly other ways to enter the Boundless Yin Yang Sect without taking the disciple examination, but these methods are quite tedious and would require me to contact some people—people who I don't want to know that I am still alive."

"Is there anything I or the others can do?" Luo Ziyi asked.

"If you do that, it'll definitely attract attention, and I don't want to be in the spotlight even before I join the sect," he said.

Su Yang then laid on the bed and closed his eyes to ponder.

Luo Ziyi didn't say anything and allowed him to think in silence.

A few minutes later, Su Yang opened his eyes and said, "Since I cannot approach them... I will have to make them approach me instead."

"What?" Luo Ziyi looked at him with wide eyes.

This is all he could come up with after thinking for so long? And what did he mean by 'making them approach him'?

"Allow me to explain. I am going to go to the closest city to the Boundless Yin Yang Sect, and then I am going to make a name for myself there. Hopefully, it won't take too long for someone at the sect to notice my presence and invite me to join the sect."

"And how are you going to make them notice you?"

"By dual cultivating, of course."

"Is that so..." Luo Ziyi looked at him with a somewhat weird look on her face.

When Su Yang saw this, he said with a smile, "Don't look at me like I am crazy. The city nearest to the Boundless Yin Yang Sect is called the City of Pleasure, and it is quite famous for being a place where cultivators can go to enjoy themselves. From luxurious escorts to mortals who simply want to have one-night stands, you can find them all in the City of Pleasure."

"The disciples of Boundless Yin Yang Sect usually go to this city to have fun when they get bored of their fellow disciples, and if I can cultivate with one of them, I will display some of my skills— just enough to make them interested in me. If I do this right, they will definitely try to recruit me to the sect!" Su Yang said with a confident look on his face.

"It could take weeks— even months before they notice me, but it'll be much better than waiting for 9 years."

Su Yang then turned to look at Luo Ziyi and asked her, "Are you going to come with me? Or are you going to return to the Sacred Lands?"

"I will follow you until you reach the city and probably even spend a few more days with you, but after that, I will have to return to the sect. I'm afraid that if I keep the others waiting, they will get impatient and start seeking for you, and there are some important events coming up for the sect," she said.

"Alright." Su Yang nodded.

Chapter 947 City of Pleasure

Su Yang and Luo Ziyi left the Martial God City shortly after they arrived, using the teleport formation to instantly transport them to the City of Pleasure, a renowned city within Martial Heaven.

Once they arrived at the city, Su Yang and Luo Ziyi went to look for a hotel, and there were plenty of hotels within the City of Pleasure.

In fact, the number of hotels within the City of Pleasure far surpassed that of ordinary buildings and stores, as one-night stands were quite popular in this place, and with the massive number of visitors every day, they required a lot of hotels.

As they walked down the wide and busy street, they could see countless women standing around.

Pretty young ladies, graceful ladies, mature women, beautiful women— there were all kinds of beauties available in the City of Pleasure, all of them looking to please others or wanting to be pleased.

There were also a lot of handsome men in the City of Pleasure just for the ladies— or other men depending on one's taste.

"How much experience do you have in this place?" Luo Ziyi suddenly asked Su Yang.

"What makes you think I would have experience in such a place?" Su Yang responded with a smile on his face.

"Please. This place is called the City of Pleasure— it has your middle name in it. I wouldn't be surprised if you were the lord of this place at one point in time," she said.

Su Yang laughed out loud at her words, and he said, "Unfortunately, you're wrong about this one. I have only been here a handful of times, and most of them were business-related. In fact, I didn't like this place in the past."

"Really? Why not? This place is like a paradise for dual cultivators," she said.

"I'm not exactly sure myself either, to be completely honest with you. I just never really liked the place ever since I heard about it.

"Maybe it's because it will be too easy for you to seduce someone in this place that's catered to people like you? I know you have a habit of trying to challenge yourself by chasing after women people deem impossible to conquer. If you look at our family, almost everyone has impressive backgrounds and plenty of influence within the Four Divine Heavens— women that one normally wouldn't even imagine conquering." Luo Ziyi said to him.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I cannot deny that I didn't like a good challenge back then. The more someone would refuse, the more effort I'd put into conquering her. However, I think I have changed since then."

"You sure have..." Luo Ziyi said with a smile.

Sometime later, they eventually found a hotel that wasn't already fully booked, and they rented the room for a week.

Once they were inside the room, Luo Ziyi concealed the room with a formation.

Su Yang then retrieved one of the pills Yu Xiang gave him and consumed it, altering his fatty appearance to something more ordinary and average.

If a stranger were to look at Su Yang right now, they'd see only see an ordinary scholar who didn't have any impressive or special features— he was just your run-of-the-mill scholar.

"That's your new appearance?" Luo Ziyi looked at him with her eyebrows slightly raised.

"Yes. How do I look?"

"You look... lackluster— so plain that I can speak with you and then forget about you the moment we stop talking," she said.

Su Yang chuckled at her words, and he said, "Good enough."

"Well, what are you going to do now? I am curious how you're going to attract the Boundless Yin Yang Sect without attracting too much attention."

Hearing her question, Su Yang stared at her with a dead serious look on his face, and he spoke in a calm voice, "I am going to open up a store."

"A what?" Luo Ziyi's eyes widened.

"A store," he repeated.

"I heard you... But what kind of store?"

"A massage parlor," he said, leaving Luo Ziyi speechless.

"You're going to open up a massage parlor...?"

Luo Ziyi never thought she'd see the day where Su Yang would do something so random and ridiculous.

The God of Pleasure opening up a massage parlor? It was truly a miracle she never thought could be possible.

"Once I open my massage parlor, I will have a way to make a name for myself without any suspicions. Eventually, the Boundless Yin Yang Sect will notice me and try to recruit me," he said with a confident smile on his face.

"I really have to see this now. Let's open up your store now." Luo Ziyi said, seemingly more eager to open up the massage parlor than Su Yang himself.

"Okay."

They proceeded to make their way to the management building for the City of Pleasure, where they handled all business-related things for the city.

"How may I help you two?" An old man asked them once they reached the desk.

"I would like to open up a store in the city," said Su Yang.

"What kind of store are you looking to open in the City of Pleasure? A brothel?"

"No, I want to open up a massage parlor," he said with a serious look on his face.

"I'm sorry, but there are already enough massage parlors in the City of Pleasure." The old man shook his head.

However, Luo Ziyi suddenly retrieved 10 flawless-quality spirit stones and placed them on the desk in front of the old man, whose eyes immediately widened with shock when he realized what they were.

10 flawless-quality spirit stones were more than enough to buy a hundred shops within the City of Pleasure, much less a single massage parlor.

"P-Please excuse this old man, esteemed guests. I must have made a mistake due to old age. Now that I think about it, there seems to be a lack of massage parlors in the City of Pleasure, and if you'd like to open one, we will gladly have you with us!" The old man's attitude did a 180 turn upon seeing the money.

Chapter 948 Massage Parlor

Although it was questionable why someone who could afford to waste 10 flawless-quality spirit stones to open up a massage parlor would do so, the old man couldn't care less about their reasons and decided to accept them.

The old man then began looking for available areas in the City of Pleasure.

"Do you have any preferences for the location of your massage parlor, esteemed guests?" The old man asked them.

"Not really," Su Yang said, as he wasn't worried about getting no customers.

"Then how about the Red Light District? It is usually the most populated area in the City of Pleasure, and most of the people there are high-class." The old man suggested.

Su Yang pondered for a moment before shaking his head.

"I want something less extravagant and something more... basic. It is also a plus if there's a good variety of people there."

The old man nodded and pondered for a minute before speaking again, "What about the Pink Light District? You can find all sorts of people there, from mortals to immortals."

"That sounds good." Su Yang agreed.

"Great! What about the building? There are currently 6 buildings available in the Pink Light District. Should I just get the biggest one that's available for you?"

"No, I want something small and comfortable. I will only be accepting one customer at a time, after all."

"There are 2 buildings that fit your criteria. Here are the layouts of the building. Which one do you prefer?" The old man then placed two scrolls on the desk, showing them two different buildings and their interiors.

"I want this one." Su Yang picked the building on the right, which had two small rooms and a single bathroom.

"Okay, then I will register you as the new owner of the building now. Can you give me some basic information about yourself?"

Su Yang nodded and began making up his background.

"My name is Xiao Yang, and I am from a common family. After failing to become a scholar multiple times, I have decided to give up on becoming a scholar to start my own business. I am also 20 years old." Su Yang gave the old man more information than was needed just in case someone were to ask them about his background.

'A common family?' The old man raised his eyebrows.

What kind of common family has the ability to spend 10 flawless-grade spirit stones to open up a massage parlor in the City of Pleasure? And why would a failed scholar suddenly decide to open up a massage parlor? What made him change direction in life this hard? The old man was curious, but he didn't dare ask.

"What about you, young lady?" The old man turned to look at Luo Ziyi, thinking that she will also be working with Su Yang.

Luo Ziyi shook her head and said, "I won't be working in the store. He's the sole owner of the store— I am just paying for him since I owe him a debt."

"I-I understand. Just me a few minutes to make this official." The old man then went away for some minutes before returning with some scrolls in his hand and a key.

"Here are the documents that will prove you're the owner of the massage parlor. This one over here has all of the rules you must follow as a store owner of the City of Pleasure. This one is about taxes. Every year, the city will take a percentage of your income as tax depending on whichever district you are located in. Oh, this one is the location of your building. If you have any questions, feel free to ask them now or come back later."

"Thank you."

Su Yang accepted the items and tossed them into his storage ring before leaving the place with Luo Ziyi.

They then followed the map until they arrived before a small and empty building that was located in the center of the Pink Light District, one of many districts within the City of Pleasure.

Using the key given to them, they went into this building.

The first room was a small squared room that had a single desk in the middle with nothing else.

"This will be the reception." Su Yang said as he walked to the door straight ahead, entering the second room in this building.

The second room was three times larger than the first room, giving Su Yang plenty of room to work with.

After spending a moment looking around the building, Su Yang cleaned the place until not even a speck of dust remained.

He then placed a couple of chairs in the reception room and a single large mattress in the center of the second room.

"This is it? It looks so... unprofessional and sketchy." Luo Ziyi said afterward, giving her honest opinion of the place.

"I don't have any proper furniture at this moment so I will decorate the place properly later," he said.

"This will suffice for now."

Su Yang then retrieved a large piece of cloth with something written on it from his storage ring.

Luo Ziyi read the contents on the cloth with her eyebrows raised the whole time.

"Heaven Massage... Experience what it feels like to be in heaven... First three customers free of charge?"

Indeed, Su Yang had kept the sign he'd created for his massage business within the Profound Blossom Sect when he was still a mere Outer Court disciple this entire time.

"This thing doesn't look new. When did you make it?" Luo Ziyi noticed this and asked him.

"When I first regained my memories in the other world," he said in a calm voice.

"Why did you keep something like this?" She couldn't help but ask.

"I just felt like it, I guess. It has some history behind it as well."

Sometime later, once they were prepared to open, Su Yang hung the sign made of cloth directly in front of the building, attracting attention from the surrounding pedestrians and the other stores already, but it was not because they wanted a massage. Instead, they were baffled by his sloppy and poor advertising method, and some of them even thought it was a joke.

Chapter 949 First Customer

"What the heck is he doing? Did someone finally decide to take up that store?" One of the store owners there asked the others.

"Heavenly Massage... So a massage parlor? Don't we already have enough of those in the city? I'm surprised the management even allowed him to open another one."

"The management probably made a mistake, but this is good news for us since this new business most likely won't affect our business at all," said another.

There were over a dozen stores around Su Yang's massage parlor. Half of them were hotels with the other half being brothels. There were a few unique stores, such as a store that sold special treasures that can only be used inside the bedroom, and another one that sold pills and medicine that enhances one's experience in the bedroom.

Of course, there were also a couple of massage parlors within the Pink Light District, and all of them have more reputation and credit than Su Yang's newly opened massage parlor, meaning that getting new customers would be difficult.

After hanging the sign outside the building, Su Yang went back inside and proceeded to wait for customers.

Three days passed by in a flash since Su Yang opened up his massage parlor, but he has yet to have a single customer walk through his doors.

"Three days and not a single customer despite advertising free services. This isn't a good look for your business, dear." Luo Ziyi said to him.

And she continued, "If you cannot get customers when it's free, how in heaven's name are you going to get customers once you start charging people?"

"Patience, Ziyi... patience..." Su Yang said with a calm look on his face as he cultivated in the corner of the room.

"Hopefully you get a customer before I leave in a few days." Luo Ziyi said.

"It may start out slow— extremely slow, but the moment I get my first customer, things will speed up significantly," he said.

They continued to wait for a customer to show up.

Two days later, they finally heard the door to their building open.

A moment later, they can hear a feminine voice, "Hello? Is there anybody here?"

Luo Ziyi then went outside and said, "Welcome to Heavenly Massage. How may I help you?"

Luo Ziyi decided to take the role of receptionist for as long as she was working there.

A woman with ordinary facial features but a beautiful slender figure walked up to her and asked, "I saw the promotion outside and decided to give it a try. After all, I can't refuse free things... Or am I too late?"

"No, you're not. Each session will be for thirty minutes. Are you okay with that?" Luo Ziyi asked her.

"Yes, I am fine with that." The woman nodded.

Luo Ziyi then guided her to the next room that only took a couple of steps to arrive.

The moment they went inside this room, they could see an ordinary young man with a scholarly aura around him standing there with a gentle smile on his face.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage, beautiful young fairy." Su Yang greeted the woman.

"T-Thank you..." The woman was taken by surprise by Su Yang's complement, as this was her first time being called beautiful.

"Please lay down over here with your back facing the ceiling." Su Yang then pointed at the luxurious mattress on the floor.

The woman was stunned that they didn't even have a proper massage table, but she laid on the mattress regardless.

'Wow... What a comfortable mattress...'

The woman was once again taken by surprise by the high-quality mattress under her body; it was definitely one of the most comfortable mattresses she has experienced in her life thus far.

"Let me know when you're ready so that we can begin." Su Yang said to her once she laid down.

"You can start now," she said to him.

"Okay. Please excuse me."

Su Yang then kneeled beside the mattress and began caressing his fingers across her back while she was still fully clothed.

The woman's body trembled at the sensation of Su Yang's fingers on her back, feeling as though his fingers were caressing her skin despite having clothes on.

A few moments later, Su Yang began pressing his fingers into certain locations on her back, poking her vital points with the Finger of Fulfillment technique.

"Ah~!"

To her own surprise, the woman subconsciously released a loud moan that echoed in the small room.

Su Yang didn't mind it at all and continued to massage her vital points all over her body.

In just a few minutes, the woman had moaned multiple times, and her body was twitching all over the place.

"Do you want to turn around?" Su Yang asked the woman.

"Yes..."

The woman then flipped her body around with some difficulty due to her sensitive body at the moment.

However, just as Su Yang moved his hands, the woman said, "Wait a moment... Let me take off my clothes. Do you mind?"

"Make yourself comfortable," he said, still with a gentle smile on his face.

"..."

Despite his ordinary appearances, the woman was charmed by his gentle smile and seemingly noble demeanor, not to mention his godlike hand techniques.

The woman then loosened her clothes and spread it over the mattress like a blanket.

"You have a beautiful figure, young fairy." Su Yang said to her.

Compared to her lackluster face, her body was incredibly beautiful, perfectly portioned, and beautifully shaped.

"I am ready." The woman said to him in a somewhat bashful look on her face, feeling like a docile young lady waiting to be pampered.

Su Yang nodded and proceeded to caress his hands all over the woman's naked body, starting from her stomach and moving up to her breasts, before going back down again and massaging her legs.

Su Yang continued to tease this woman's body for ten minutes without actually going for her little sister that was soaked with Yin Qi by now.

When the woman could no longer endure his teasing, she grabbed his hand and moved it towards her little sister while looking at him with a passionate gaze.

"Do whatever you want to my body," she said to him.

Chapter 950 Do You Do Anything Other Than Massages?

"Ahhhh~!"

Su Yang's first customer in the massage parlor moaned passionately as he worked his fingers inside her soaking wet cave that was also gushing with Yin Qi.

After giving Su Yang full access to her body, he has been displaying some of his godlike techniques on her little sister until the woman was on the verge of going crazy.

"Yes~! Yes~! Yes~!"

"More~! More~! Give me more~!"

The woman begged loudly, completely unaware that her voice and moaning had penetrated the thin walls of this building and resounded in the street for everyone to hear.

A few buildings away from Su Yang's massage parlor, a middle-aged man had a frown on his face as he heard the woman's moaning voice that was clearly filled with pleasure.

"Hey, I saw one of your girls entering that new massage parlor. Did you send her inside to test the place?" Someone eventually approached the middle-aged man and asked him.

The man nodded and said, "I was hoping that whoever was managing that place sucked so that I could chase him out of the Pink Light District. However, my plans have basically backfired. With how loud that bitch is moaning, everyone that wasn't interested in it at first will definitely be looking at it in a different light now. Fuck! I shouldn't have sent her there!"

The middle-aged man realized that he'd just sent a rabbit inside a tiger's den that appeared to be a harmless place.

And just as the middle-aged man had expected, the pedestrians were curious about the situation inside this new massage parlor that came out of the blue, as they have never heard such blissful-sounding moans before.

Eventually, someone couldn't resist her curiosity and entered the building.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage! How may I help you?" Luo Ziyi greeted her.

"Hi... I would like a massage," said the pretty young woman in a nervous voice, as the moaning suddenly became twice as loud inside the building.

"Okay! The current session will end in about five minutes. Until then, please take a seat over there and wait until it's your turn." Luo Ziyi said, acting incredibly professional despite her status.

Luo Ziyi acted so professionally that if someone told the customers that she was a powerful immortal at the peak of Immortal Ascension, nobody would believe that person.

In the first place, there was simply no way that an immortal at the peak of Immortal Ascension would work as a mere receptionist in some massage parlor in one of the most lustful cities in the Four Divine Heaven.

The new customer took a seat at the side of the room and began waiting, but her heart could not calm down with the constant moaning coming from the other room that was only a couple of meters away.

Three minutes later, another new customer entered the building and asked for a massage.

Now that they had three customers, Luo Ziyi went outside to take down the sign that advertised free massages.

The moaning finally stopped a couple more minutes later, and the street became dead silent almost instantly after the moaning stopped.

About five minutes later, the door to the massage room opened, and a woman slowly walked out in an unstable manner, looking like she was incredibly drunk.

The woman took a couple of steps towards the exit before stopping to release a soft moan.

The next second, liquid began dripping onto the floor beneath the woman, almost like she'd pissed herself.

However, the water was too clear to be pee and looked more like Yin Qi.

The customers swallowed nervously when they saw this, and their expectations for the massage session grew exponentially.

Sometime later, the woman made it to the exit with much difficulty.

"Goodbye! Thank you for your business!" Luo Ziyi said to the woman with a bright smile on her face, playing the role of a receptionist to perfection.

She then looked at the next customer and said, "You may now enter the massage room."

The pretty young woman nodded and stood up before making her way to the massage room.

Once inside the room, the new customer was shocked by the scene inside the massage room.

The room was soaked, almost like it had been sprayed with water, and standing beside a mattress was an ordinary-looking young man who was also soaked in water.

"Please give me a moment to clean up," Su Yang said to the woman, who nodded her head in a dazed manner.

Su Yang then used a profound technique to dry the wet walls and floor almost instantly.

He then started changing his clothes in front of the woman, revealing his refined body to her.

Of course, he did this purposefully.

The young woman swallowed nervously when she saw Su Yang's flawless upper body, but when she noticed the large sausage dangling between his legs, her jaw dropped from shock, as she has never seen such a large sword before, and it wasn't even in its awakened form just yet.

This made the woman wonder what it would look like when fully erected.

Su Yang quickly finished changing his clothes, and once he was done, he replaced the soaked mattress with a brand new one.

"I apologize for the wait, young fairy. Please, lay down for me." Su Yang said to her with a handsome smile on his face.

The young woman nodded her head and laid on the comfortable mattress with her heart beating like crazy.

Sometime later, Su Yang began massaging her body that was still fully clothed.

However, the young woman quickly realized that even with her clothes on, it felt like she was naked when Su Yang touched her body, so she decided to take it off a few minutes into the massage.

A few minutes later, once it was time for her to flip, the woman flipped her naked body over and looked at Su Yang with a hinting gaze.

However, Su Yang acted like he didn't notice it and continued to massage her body professionally— until the woman personally spread her legs wide and said, "Hey, do you do anything other than massages here? Money isn't an issue for me."

Su Yang chuckled in a charming manner before speaking in a calm voice, "You're the customer. I will do whatever you want me to do."

The woman then pointed at the area between his legs and said, "I want you to massage my body with that monster inside your pants."

Chapter 951 Noise Complaints

"Y-You useless bitch!" The middle-aged man that sent Su Yang's first customer to his massage parlor yelled at the woman when she returned to her workplace.

"I sent you to that massage parlor to ruin their reputation, not help their business! Look at what you've done! Do you have any idea how loud you were moaning in there?! The entire street could hear it loud and clear!"

Hearing her manager's words, the woman was shocked. She was moaning that loud? She was too indulged in the pleasure to even realize it!

"I-I'm sorry, manager, but it just felt too good. I have never felt anything like that before," she said to him afterward.

"W-What did you just say?" The manager looked dumbfounded after hearing her words.

"As much as I hate to say this, I think we shouldn't mess with that massage parlor, manager. I have a feeling that it will become quite big within the City of Pleasure, much less the Pink Light District, and if we offend them, who knows what might happen in the future." The woman said to him.

"I don't have to hear that bullshit! Get out of my face!" The middle-aged man shouted in an angry voice.

"Excuse me." The woman didn't show much of a reaction despite the manager's reaction, clearly used to it.

However, just as she approached the brothel, she could hear an incredibly loud moan come from the massage parlor she'd just left, causing her to turn around with wide eyes.

"Aaaaaah~!"

The moaning was so loud that it'd startled everyone on the street.

"Heavens! What the heck was that? It sounded even louder than before!"

"Whoever is inside is definitely exaggerating her moaning. There's no way this is real." Another person said, doubting the legitimacy of the moaning.

"I agree. This is probably some sort of advertisement they're doing for their massage parlor. I refuse to believe that one could possibly moan so loud without deliberately doing so."

Despite some of the store owners' doubt, the pedestrians were definitely intrigued by whatever was happening inside the massage parlor.

However, they were not only interested in whatever was happening inside, but they were also afraid as well.

After all, nobody there could fathom the satisfaction this woman was feeling to release such blissful and loud moans.

It could be said that the majority of customers within the City of Pleasure had above average endurance since they were used to pleasure, so in order to make someone feel this good, the massage must be top-notch.

The moaning from the massage parlor continued to resound in the area until almost half an hour later.

A few minutes after the moaning stopped, everyone there could see a woman walking out of the shop with shaky legs that wouldn't stop even if she was standing still, almost like they were made of tofu or something.

"Ah!"

The young woman fell on the floor after taking a few steps and was unable to stand up again.

The pedestrian was baffled when they saw this, and some of them approached her.

"Are you okay, young lady?" Someone there offered his hand to the woman.

However, the woman shook her head and said, "I am okay. My body is just incredibly sensitive at the moment. I don't want to be touched. Thank you for your concerns."

Someone else there then asked, "You just got a massage from that place, right? How did it feel? Was it really that incredible? We could hear your moaning even a street away."

"I-I was that loud?" The young woman immediately blushed when she realized that she'd been moaning loud enough for everyone to hear.

When the others saw her genuine bashful reaction, they knew that she wasn't faking her moaning before.

"Unfortunately, words cannot describe what I felt inside the massage parlor. That young man inside... He's incredibly talented, and his techniques were simply godlike. I urge everyone to give it a try. You won't regret it," said the young woman.

Everyone there exchanged glances with each other.

"I-I am going to try it out!" Someone there said after a moment of silence.

She then entered the small building.

As for the young woman, she proceeded to sit in front of the massage parlor until she could finally move again.

A few minutes later, another customer in the massage parlor began moaning, filling the street with blissful moans.

The store owners on the same street were beginning to get annoyed by the constant moaning. Although the sound of moaning was frequent within the City of Pleasure and could be heard on nearly every single street in the city, they weren't this loud and distracting.

Eventually, one of the store owners there went inside the massage parlor to complain.

"Hey! Can you keep the noises down? Or do you expect us to deal with so much noise every day? If you need someone to make a sound concealment formation for your massage parlor, I can refer you to someone!" One of the store owners there complained to Luo Ziyi.

Luo Ziyi showed an apologetic smile and said, "I'm sorry for the inconvenience. We have already contacted an array master to help reduce the noises, but it will take a few more days before he arrives."

"Che!"

The store owner wanted to continue to complain, but she wasn't able to find any reason to do so.

"If I still hear so much noise by next week, I will make a formal complaint to the management hall and have them deal with your place!" The store owner said to Luo Ziyi before leaving the place.

"Thank you for your understanding," Luo Ziyi said to her as she left the massage parlor.

As an array master herself, she could make the formation whenever she wanted, but if she did that before their massage parlor got some attention, it would be bad for their business, so they purposefully avoided that until someone made a complaint.

Thus, the customers' loud moaning continued to terrorize that street for a few more days until Luo Ziyi had to leave the City of Pleasure and return to her sect.

Chapter 952 Two Months

"Dear, it's about time for me to leave. I have already stayed here for longer than I had liked," Luo Ziyi said to him after the massage parlor closed down for the day.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Thank you for all your help. I wouldn't have made it to this point so quickly without your help."

"If you want to thank me, you can do so by staying safe and coming back to us soon," she then said.

"I will return once everything is prepared and I am able to— I promise."

Luo Ziyi then gave Su Yang a passionate kiss on the lips and then said afterward, "Once I return, I will let the others know what you told me. I don't know when they'll visit you, but expect a visit from them soon."

Luo Ziyi then handed him a storage ring.

"Here's some money if you need it. I know you don't like to rely on others too much, especially if you don't need to so I didn't give you anything too grand. However, it's better to have them when you need them than when you need them but don't have any."

"Thank you. I will accept it." Su Yang accepted the storage ring, but he didn't look inside, as he wanted to keep it a surprise for when he needed it.

After kissing Su Yang one more time, Luo Ziyi left the massage parlor and disappeared from the city.

Once she was far away and alone, Luo Ziyi removed her disguise and started returning to the sect with her flying treasure.

Whoosh!

The flying treasure flew straight into the starry sky and then towards the Celestial Heaven, traveling between Divine Heavens without using any teleport formations.

A week later, Luo Ziyi returned to the sect and summoned the others.

"Sister Ziyi! You have finally returned! I was getting anxious waiting!" The family quickly gathered at her living quarters.

After Luo Ziyi concealed their place with a formation, she began telling them about her adventure with Su Yang.

"You had such an adventure with Su Yang? How envious..."

"Sister Ziyi, did you ask Su Yang about whether or not we can visit him?"

Luo Ziyi nodded, "Of course. I wouldn't forget about something so important."

"Well? What did he say!?" The ladies stared at her with anticipation in their gaze.

Luo Ziyi smiled and said, "He said it's okay if you visit him—"

"Yes!"

The room instantly became filled with excitement from the goddesses that were acting like a bunch of children who just got approval to leave the house so that they could play with their friends outside.

"Let me finish." Luo Ziyi said to them after giving them a moment to rejoice.

"Su Yang gave all of us permission to visit him, but only one person can visit him at a time, and you must be disguised when you visit him."

"That's fine. We were already prepared to do that much and even more if we got to see him." One of them said.

"The real question is... Who gets to visit him first?" Wang Yunxuan suddenly said.

The place instantly turned dead silent with everyone in the room exchanging glances, and the atmosphere there suddenly became heavy, almost as though a war was about to begin.

"Calm down." Luo Ziyi was the first to break the silence, and she continued, "We can decide the order through a lottery draw. This way, we don't have to fight each other to decide."

"A lottery draw?" They looked at her with raised eyebrows.

"Yes. In fact, I already have everything prepared."

Luo Ziyi then retrieved a dozen round rocks and placed them on the table.

"Inside each of these rocks is a number— from one to twelve. You will each pick one rock, and whatever number you get is your position in the queue to meet Su Yang."

"And don't even bother trying to cheat. Your spiritual sense won't work on these rocks." Luo Ziyi said to them.

Of course, all of them have tried to peek inside the rock way before Luo Ziyi even said that sentence, but alas, they were unable to see anything.

"Go ahead. Pick one." Luo Ziyi then said to them.

After swallowing nervously, each of the goddesses picked a rock randomly.

Once everyone there had a rock in their hand, they all smashed it simultaneously, revealing a piece of paper inside.

"Yes! I am first!" One of them suddenly exclaimed when she saw the number 'one' on her paper.

"Damn it! I got number seven?!"

"Why have the heavens abandoned me? What did I do to deserve the last place?"

A few of them were satisfied with their result— mostly the ones that picked a low number, while the others cursed their bad luck.

The goddess that got number twelve even cried slightly when she saw the number.

"Sister Ziyi, when can I visit Su Yang?" The lucky lady who managed to get the number 'one' asked her afterward.

"You can visit him whenever you want." Luo Ziyi said.

"Then I will go right now!"

"Wait just a moment!" Someone suddenly stopped her.

And then she continued, "We still need to decide how long we each get to spend with Su Yang! It shouldn't be too long so that the rest of us won't have to wait years before we can see him, nor should it be so short that we leave unsatisfied."

"How long did Sister Ziyi spend with Su Yang? We can use her as the standard." Wang Yunxuan suggested.

"If you only count the time I was actually with him, then about two months, give or take." Luo Ziyi said.

"How does two months sound, everyone?" Wang Yunxuan asked them.

"Although it's a little shorter than I'd hoped... I guess so." One of them agreed.

"I also don't mind. If you think about it, two months is actually a lot of time, especially when we usually only get to spend about a week with him at most before he leaves to somewhere in the Divine Heavens, and then we won't see him for a few more years."

"If you say it like that, two months is actually a lot of time... I agree with this amount of time!" Another one agreed.

Eventually, everyone agreed on spending two months with Su Yang each.

Chapter 953 Hiring a New Receptionis

After Luo Ziyi left his side, Su Yang decided to take a few days off from working at the massage parlor to look for a new receptionist. After all, managing the massage parlor by himself would be very difficult when he has to spend most of his time with the customer, and stopping to massage to receive new customers wouldn't be very personal or good for the business.

Of course, there was Xiao Rong, who could replace Luo Ziyi. However, Su Yang felt that Xiao Rong wouldn't be a great receptionist mostly due to her nonchalant character, and he preferred someone a little more professional.

Once he prepared his sign, Su Yang placed it right outside his massage parlor, instantly attracting many gazes.

[Hiring a female receptionist. Free massages. 1 high-grade spirit stone every month.]

A bunch of ladies crowded around Su Yang's sign before he could even return to the store.

"What happened to the previous receptionist?" One of them couldn't help but ask him.

"She was only helping me temporarily, and she had to go home," he said.

"Are there any more requirements? Does our cultivation base or background matter?" Another one asked.

"The only requirement is that you're a woman and you know how to treat the guests properly. Also, you must answer a few of my questions truthfully. If you wish to apply for the position, I will be inside." Su Yang said to them before entering the massage parlor.

Of course, the women outside also followed him inside, as they were interested in the role.

Not only was 1 high-grade spirit stone a month an incredibly high salary for a receptionist working anywhere in the Four Divine Heavens, much less a massage parlor in the City of Pleasure, they also get to work for Su Yang, who was given the nickname 'Divine Hands' by his customers only a week into his business.

Despite working at the City of Pleasure for only a week, Su Yang's massage parlor has already become a hot topic within the Pink Light District.

It was so popular that one could not walk in the street without hearing about it, and the number of customers looking for a massage had grown exponentially— to the point where customers can no longer sit in the lobby and wait for their turn.

Instead, they must write their name on a waiting list and wait until it's their turn, and currently, the waiting list has an estimated wait time of one week despite Su Yang accepting 20 customers a day, seven days a week.

A line quickly appeared outside Su Yang's massage parlor with the number of women wanting to work for him entering double-digit within 10 minutes since Su Yang posted his hiring sign.

Meanwhile, inside the massage parlor, Su Yang spoke with the women one by one.

"Do you have any experience as a receptionist?" Su Yang asked the pretty young woman.

"Yes! I have three years of experience when I worked at the Blue Light District!" The woman spoke with a smile on her face.

However, Su Yang could immediately tell this woman was farting about her experience.

Though he didn't say anything about it and continued to question her.

At the end of the interview, Su Yang told the woman that she did not qualify.

"W-Why?" The woman asked him in a dumbfounded voice.

"I prefer someone I can trust, but you lied straight to my face multiple times."

"N-Nonsense! When did I lie?! How could you even tell?!" She spoke with disbelief.

"I am a scholar. I know when people lie." Su Yang said with a calm smile on his face, making up some bullshit with his fake identity.

The woman gritted her teeth and left the place without saying another word.

Su Yang continued to speak with potential workers, but there were only liars and people who didn't qualify for multiple reasons.

Of course, there were a few over-qualified individuals that Su Yang suspected to be people sent by the other store owners.

Three days later, a small figure that looked too young to be in the City of Pleasure entered Su Yang's massage parlor.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows when he saw this young girl who looked only to be around 10 to 14 years old inside his store.

"Do you need something?" Su Yang asked her.

The young girl nodded and said, "I want the job."

"How old are you?"

"12 years old," she said.

"And what is someone at your age doing in the City of Pleasure meant for adults?"

"I live here," she said, and she continued, "My mother works here as an entertainer, but she doesn't make a lot of money, so I want to help her by working as well."

"You're working? In the City of Pleasure? What do you do?" Su Yang couldn't help but ask her.

"I am currently working as a servant in the brothel two streets down."

Su Yang was dumbfounded to hear this. The City of Pleasure allows someone this young to work in a brothel? Isn't that illegal? Or is she working in secrecy?

However, upon closer inspection, Su Yang could tell that this little girl was still a maiden, so she most likely wasn't doing whatever the adults were doing.

The little girl then continued, "My job is to clean dirty clothes and towels, and I occasionally clean the rooms, but the money is very little. I can barely buy a piece of bread after working an entire day."

"And as much as I want to work as an entertainer, the city doesn't allow me to do so because of my age. They told me that I need to be at least 20 years old to start working as an entertainer."

"My age shouldn't matter for this job, right? I didn't see any age requirement outside either." The little girl said, sounding quite mature for someone at her age, most likely because of the mature environment she was born in.

"You're right. I don't care how old you are as long as you can do your job properly." Su Yang nodded.

"With that being said, you still need to answer my questions. If I am satisfied with your answers, I will hire you."

"Okay." The little girl nodded and patiently waited for his questions.

Chapter 954 Intelligent Little girl

"How old are you?" Su Yang asked the girl her age again despite asking it a minute ago.

"12 years old." The girl answered without any pauses.

"Why do you want this job?"

"I need the money to support my mother."

"Are you okay with working 10 hours a day for seven days a week?"

"Yes."

"How did you hear about this place?"

"From the workers working at the same brothel as I am."

"Do you have any experience as a receptionist?"

"No."

"What do you consider to be your weakness?"

"Being poor."

Su Yang chuckled inwardly at the little girl's straightforward answer.

Despite asking so many questions, Su Yang didn't actually care about the answers, as he only wanted to see how well the little girl would be able to handle them.

"Tell me about yourself." Su Yang then asked.

"My name is Mei Xing, and I was born by accident when my mother accidentally got impregnated by a client, so I do not know my father. Despite only having enough to support herself, my mother still decided to keep me, working even harder than before to provide for the both of us, and I want to repay her kindness by helping her financially."

The little girl named Mei Xing gave a brief yet deep background about herself. Despite growing up in such an environment, she was well-spoken and quite intelligent, especially for someone at her young age.

"Alright... Final question... Why should I hire you?" Su Yang then asked her.

"You should hire me because I will do everything you ask of me, and I will never complain! I am also very good at keeping secrets, so whatever you decide to do with me, I won't utter a single word!" Mei Xing quickly responded with a firm expression on her face.

Su Yang smiled at her words and said, "Do I look like someone who will take advantage of a little girl? I am a scholar— or at least I tried to become one."

He then pondered for a moment before nodding, "Okay, I will hire you."

"Really?" Mei Xing looked at him with a slightly surprised face, as she didn't expect it would be this easy.

Su Yang nodded.

When Mei Xing said that she'd keep a secret no matter what, regardless of her intentions when saying such words, Su Yang had decided to hire her.

"When do I start?" Mei Xing then asked.

"Can you start tomorrow?" Su Yang asked her.

"I can start today!" She replied.

"The store opens at sunrise. Be here before then, but you can come here whenever. And when you leave the store later, help me take down the hiring sign."

"I understand! Thank you for giving me this opportunity to work for you! I won't disappoint you!" Mei Xing bowed to him before leaving the store.

Once outside, she took down the hiring sign.

When the others still waiting outside for their interview saw this, they frowned and asked, "What are you doing, little girl?"

"The store owner told me to take down the sign." Mei Xing said to them without revealing that she'd received the job.

"What? Why would he tell you that?"

"I am just following what I was told." Mei Xing responded before walking away, leaving the others speechless.

'What an interesting little girl...' Su Yang laughed from inside the store when he saw Mei Xing's smart play with his spiritual sense.

A few moments later, the woman that was supposed to be next in line entered the building and asked Su Yang what was going on.

"I have already found my new receptionist. Thank you for your interest. And for the inconveniences, I will give you a free massage on your next visit." Su Yang told her the truth.

Although the woman was upset that she had waited the entire day, she wasn't angry in the slightest since she got a free massage out of it.

The woman then left the store and told the others that the hiring had ended, leaving them speechless.

Meanwhile, Mei Xing returned to her store to bid farewell to the people there before resigning from the place.

After that, Mei Xing went back home, which was the same place her mother worked at.

However, her mother was currently with another client, so Mei Xing had to wait until she was done before she could see her.

An hour later, Mei Xing entered her mother's room.

"What's the matter, Xing'er? Don't you usually work at this time? Did something happen?" Her mother asked her in a worried tone while sitting naked on the bed, looking a little exhausted.

"Mother! I have found a new job! And it pays much better than my previous job!" Mei Xing announced this news to her.

"A new job? What are you doing now? If it's anything—"

"Don't worry, mother. It's nothing illegal. I will be working as a receptionist in a nearby massage parlor. The manager there is a self-proclaimed scholar, and he didn't look like a bad man." Mei Xing quickly said.

"A receptionist in a massage parlor? And a scholar?" Her mother raised her eyebrows.

She has lived in the City of Pleasure for her entire life, but she doesn't recall any massage parlors with a scholar working as the manager.

"What is this place called?" She then asked.

"People call it Heavenly Massage," Mei Xing responded.

"Heavenly Massage? I have never heard of it before... Are you sure you can trust this place?"

Since she rarely leaves her room, it was natural that she hasn't heard about Su Yang's new massage parlor.

"Yes! It was recently opened, and it's already very popular from what I heard." Mei Xing nodded her head.

"Be careful, Mei Xing... There are a lot of bad people in the City of Pleasure who kidnap children and sell them to perverts..." Her mother warned her.

"I know, mother. You tell me that every day." Mei Xing said.

And before her mother could respond, someone knocked on the door and said, "Sister Mei, you have another customer!"

Hearing this, Mei Xing's mother said, "I will talk to you again later tonight. I know you're a smart girl, but be careful, Mei Xing."

Mei Xing nodded and left the building shortly afterward. However, since she'd quit her job, she had nowhere else to go, so she decided to go back to Su Yang's place.

Chapter 955 Practice

"Manager, I am back!" Mei Xing said after entering the massage parlor.

"Already?" Su Yang stopped cultivating to look at her.

"My mother is currently working, so I won't be able to see her until she gets off work at midnight," she nodded.

"So I decided to come back here. I hope you won't mind my presence, Manager."

"My name is Xiao Yang." Su Yang said to her.

"My name is Mei Xing," she then responded with an introduction despite already telling him her name before.

Su Yang smiled and said, "I mean you don't have to call me manager. Just call me Xiao Yang."

However, Mei Xing shook her head and said, "I cannot do that, Manager. That would be disrespectful of me."

"Do as you please," Su Yang quickly gave up.

He then said, "Since you're already here, do you want to practice a little before we open tomorrow? You have zero experience as a receptionist, right?"

Mei Xing nodded and said, "I was hoping for the same thing, Manager."

Su Yang then stood up and pointed at the reception desk, "Stand there—"

"You're not tall enough, huh?" Su Yang then moved one of the customers' chairs and placed it behind the desk for her to stand on.

Mei Xing then stood on the chair, allowing her to see the door and the rest of the room properly.

A moment later, Su Yang said, "I will now pretend to be a customer, so treat me as such."

He then walked outside the massage parlor and even closed the door.

A few seconds later, Su Yang opened the doors and walked inside with a calm look on his face.

"I'd like a massage," he said.

However, Mei Xing apologized in a calm voice, "I apologize for the inconvenience, but this massage parlor is only for female customers."

Su Yang's eyes widened when he heard Mei Xing's words since he didn't tell her about that, and after a moment of silence, he burst out laughing and said, "That's pretty damn good. I truly didn't expect that. Alright, you win this one. However, treat me like a female customer next."

Mei Xing nodded.

Su Yang then walked back outside for another minute before returning.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage! How can we help you today?" Mei Xing asked him with a welcoming smile on her face.

Despite her childish voice, her demeanor was quite mature.

"I'd like a massage," said Su Yang.

"It will cost 5 medium-grade spirit stones for a thirty-minute massage if you don't mind."

"Five medium-grade spirit stones for a mere massage?! That's daylight robbery!" Su Yang suddenly started complaining to test Mei Xing.

And he continued, "The other massage parlors only cost half of that! Why does this place cost so much more? It's just a massage!"

While it was true that Su Yang's massage parlor charged more than others, he hasn't had a single complaint from his customers since he started the business.

In fact, he had multiple people offer him ten times the amount just to extend the massage sessions for another half an hour!

"The price was decided by the quality of the massage, and the Manager has the best hand techniques in the entire Pink Light District according to all of his clients. Furthermore, the majority of the customers that have gotten a massage at this place agree with the price." Mei Xing said.

"Oh? Do you have any proof to back up such claims? Or are you simply farting to make me shut up?" Su Yang continued to pressure her.

"Of course." Mei Xing then took a moment to look inside the drawers before retrieving a scroll.

"All of the names on this scroll are customers currently waiting to receive a massage by the Manager, and there are hundreds of names here, not counting the hundreds of satisfied customers who already received a massage from this place at the same price."

"If you still don't believe me, you can schedule an appointment with the Manager yourself, but you don't have to pay until after the massage, and if you found the massage unsatisfactory, you won't have to pay anything."

Su Yang smiled and said, "Are you sure you don't have any experience as a receptionist? You look pretty damn experienced to me."

Mei Xing nodded.

"Then I have a few questions for you."

"How did you know about the list?"

"I heard about it from others, but I didn't really expect to find a list inside the drawers," she said.

"What about your last sentence? About not needing to pay until after the massage? I don't have any rules like that. What if the customer isn't satisfied and leaves without paying? That would be pretty bad for business, no?"

Mei Xing then responded in a clear voice, "I have confidence in the Manager's abilities, so I am not worried about any customer leaving unsatisfied."

"Oh? What makes you so confident?"

"Although I have never experienced the massage myself, I can tell just by looking at the customers after they leave the massage parlor and the look on their faces when they speak about their experience here."

"Also, if the Manager's massage wasn't very good, it wouldn't be this popular so quickly after it opened." Mei Xing explained to him where her confidence came from.

"Not bad." Su Yang nodded with an approved look on his face.

"Alright, let's go through a few more scenarios before we call it a day."

Mei Xing nodded, and they proceeded to practice for another hour.

Once they were done, Su Yang began telling her about the massage parlor a little more and his expectations for her.

Time passed extremely quickly, and before they realized it, it was already midnight.

"I will see you tomorrow at sunrise." Su Yang said to her.

"See you tomorrow, and goodnight, Manager."

After leaving the massage parlor, Mei Xing returned straight to her mother's side at her workplace.

Meanwhile, Su Yang sat in the massage room and proceeded to cultivate in silence for the rest of the night.

Chapter 956 Mei Xing's First Day at Work

"I have returned, mother." Mei Xing entered the room that reeked of sweat and other smells despite the open window.

"Welcome back."

Mei Xing then walked to the bed and said, "Mother, go take a shower. I will clean up the place for you."

"Okay. Thank you." Her mother then got off the bed and walked to the bathroom to clean her body.

Meanwhile, Mei Xing used her work experience and went to tidy up the place like she usually does, starting from the dirty blankets on the bed to the towels on the floor.

After tossing all of the dirty blankets and towels into a basket by the door, Mei Xing wiped the bed and furniture before sweeping and mopping the place.

Mei Xing moved at an incredible speed, and by the time her mother came out of the bathroom fifteen minutes later, it felt like she'd just entered a new room.

Mei Xing then went inside the bathroom to clean the bathroom before giving herself a quick shower.

"Come over here..." Her mother patted the space beside her on the bed with a gentle smile on her face.

Mei Xing nodded and sat beside her.

Her mother then retrieved a hair comb and gently combed her silky black hair that was slightly below her shoulders.

"Tell me more about this new workplace," she suddenly asked.

Mei Xing then proceeded to tell her mother about Xiao Yang and how they practiced for tomorrow.

"This Xiao Yang does seem like a wonderful individual. You should ask him to visit me whenever he's free so that I can personally see for myself if he's trustworthy," her mother said.

However, Mei Xing said, "The Manager is a busy person. He works seven days a week and accepts many customers a day, but I can ask him for you."

"I appreciate it."

"..."

After combing Mei Xing's hair until it was perfect, her mother lowered her arms and spoke in a low voice, "Mei Xing, why don't you leave me here and go live your own life? You're an incredibly intelligent girl. I'm sure you'll achieve big things in life even without me in the picture. I don't want to drag you down with me in this hellhole, and I most certainly don't want you working the same job as I am just to barely survive."

"You know I cannot abandon you here, mother. My dream is to earn enough money so that you can live a comfortable and relaxing life... outside the City of Pleasure."

Her mother showed a bittersweet smile on her face.

Even though she was proud of her daughter's intelligence, it sometimes felt like she was speaking to a mature young lady instead of a little girl who was only 12 years old, and this gave her complicated feelings in her heart.

"Mei Xing, I am destined to remain in the City of Pleasure forever. I was born in this city, and I will most likely die in this city as well. However, you're different. You have so many choices with your life. Unlike the dumb me who can only spread her legs and moan for her customers, you're a smart girl who can do whatever you put your mind to. Why don't you try becoming a cultivator? You're already way past the age when one can start cultivating."

"Will becoming a cultivator make us money?" Mei Xing asked.

"Of course! Cultivators are the richest people in the Four Divine Heavens! Not only are they wealthy, but they are also very influential!"

"..."

Mei Xing suddenly turned silent, clearly pondering.

"If you decide to become a cultivator, your mother here will buy a cultivation technique for you even if I have to work twice— three times harder."

"Cultivation techniques are very expensive. We cannot afford to spend money on that when we can barely survive ourselves." Mei Xing shook her head.

"It's okay, mother. I don't care about being a cultivator. My new job pays me spirit stones. Although I do not know how much they're worth, I know they're definitely worth much more than the coins the others give us."

Her mother sighed inwardly. Knowing Mei Xing's stubborn character, it was impossible to convince her to leave now. Perhaps when Mei Xing grows a little older and starts becoming rebellious— when she gets tired of her own mother.

"Let's go to sleep, mother. I have to wake up early tomorrow for work." Mei Xing said.

"Alright."

Mei Xing then went to close the lights before getting back into the bed and snuggling beside her mother underneath the warm blankets, quickly falling asleep.

The following morning, way before the sun even began to rise, Mei Xing woke up and quietly left the bed to not disturb her mother's sleep.

After washing her face, she prepared to leave for work.

However, as she reached the doors, her mother spoke in a low voice, "Stay safe, Mei Xing."

"You too, mother!" Mei Xing responded in an energetic voice before leaving the room and making her way towards the Heavenly Massage a couple of streets down.

When she arrived at the massage parlor, Mei Xing could already see people lined up outside the massage parlor, but none of them were actually getting the massage today, and they were all just waiting in line so they could sign their names onto the waiting list.

Mei Xing knocked on the door before entering.

"Good morning, Manager!" Mei Xing greeted him with enthusiasm.

"Morning." Su Yang stopped cultivating and opened his eyes.

"Are you ready to work?" He asked her.

"Yes!"

"Alright."

Su Yang then handed her a new set of clothes and said, "Wear this. It's your uniform starting today."

"Thank you!" Mei Xing showed a pleasantly surprised expression when she saw the uniform, as this was her first time being given something like this. At all of the other places she had worked at before, she never received anything and had to work with whatever she got, so she was definitely grateful for the uniform.

Su Yang opened the store exactly at sunrise, allowing the customers inside, and Mei Xing greeted each and every single one of them with a bright smile on her face.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage!"

Chapter 957 Priority

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage!" Mei Xing greeted her 10th customer for the day.

"I am here for an appointment," said the pretty young woman who'd just entered the massage parlor.

"What is your name?" Mei Xing asked.

Once she got the name, Mei Xing looked at the waiting list and confirmed it.

"Okay. Please wait a little bit. The Manager should be done with his current session in less than 5 minutes. You can sit over there in the meantime."

The young woman nodded and took a seat in the lobby room that was completely silent.

Before Luo Ziyi left the place, she'd placed a formation in the massage room so that they could no longer disturb their neighbors with loud moaning from the customers.

The door to the massage room opened five minutes later, and a woman walked out of the room in an unstable manner, looking incredibly drunk.

Of course, this was a common sight in the massage parlor, and pretty much every single customer that walks through those doors after the massage walks like they are drunk, not to mention their blissful face.

Once the massage room was free for about a minute, Mei Xing said to the customer, "You may go inside now. Have fun."

The young woman nodded and stood up, walking to the massage room before closing the door behind her.

A few minutes later, the door opened, and another customer entered the massage parlor.

"Welcome the Heavenly Massage! Do you already have a reservation?" Mei Xing greeted her.

"I do not, but I'd like to be on the waiting list," she said.

"The waitlist is currently at 2 weeks if you don't mind."

"2 weeks? That's a little long... Do you think I can pay extra to receive priority? I have to leave the City of Pleasure in three days, and I won't be able to return for another month."

"Priority...?" Mei Xing didn't immediately respond, as she wasn't aware of such a program.

And as much as she wanted to refuse this young woman just in case, she also knew that more money meant better business.

"Do you mind waiting for the Manager? We can ask him after his session is done."

"Okay."

The woman proceeded to sit down and wait.

Half an hour later, after the customer walked out of the massage room, Mei Xing entered the room and said, "Manager, I have a question."

"What's up?" Su Yang asked her as he cleaned up the place.

"There's this customer who wants to pay extra to receive priority in the queue since she has to leave the city in 3 days, but I am not sure if we can do that."

Su Yang pondered for a minute and said, "Okay. I can leave the store open for an extra thirty-minute if she wants to wait until the end of the day."

Although he really didn't need the money, he also didn't want to let this young woman leave the city with a bitter feeling.

"How much extra should we charge them?" Mei Xing then asked the important question.

"What do you think? I will let you decide." Su Yang said.

"..."

After a moment of silence, she said, "I think we can triple the regular price, so 15 medium-grade spirit stones if they want priority. It would be bad if it's too cheap and everybody wants a priority."

Su Yang nodded and agreed with the price.

Mei Xing then proceeded to tell the customer about it.

"The Manager is willing to give you a priority, but it'd cause massive confusion if he pushes everyone back a slot, so he will accept you at the end of the day when we're supposed to close. However, it will cost you 15 medium-grade spirit stones instead of the normal 5 for priority." Mei Xing explained to her.

"15 medium-grade spirit stones, huh? That's a lot of money for a 30-minute massage, but if the massage is truly as good as everyone says... Sure..." The woman agreed.

"Then you may come back right before the massage parlor ends and the Manager will accept you."

"Okay. Thank you." The young woman then left the store and wouldn't return until five minutes before the massage parlor was supposed to close.

"Mei Xing, you can leave now if you want. I won't make you work overtime since that wasn't part of the agreement when I hired you." Su Yang said to her.

Mei Xing shook her head and said, "It's okay, Manager. It's only 30 minutes. I will leave when the store is officially closed."

Su Yang nodded, and he accepted the customer.

30 minutes later, the woman walked out of the room with a satisfied look on her face.

"I-It was definitely worth it..." she muttered in a low voice as she left the massage parlor.

"Manager, should we advertise the priority thing, or should we keep it a secret only for those who ask for it?" Mei Xing asked him afterward.

"Let's keep it a secret for now. News will eventually spread, anyway."

"Okay. Goodnight, Manager, and good work today," Mei Xing said to him.

Su Yang nodded, "You too."

He then retrieved a high-grade spirit stone and showed it to her.

"What's this?" Mei Xing asked him.

"It's your salary. Take it."

"Eh? My salary? But I haven't worked a full month yet, and I only started today," she said with a surprised look on her face.

"It's an advance payment. I will pay you at the beginning of every month. After all, it's better to have the money now than later."

Mei Xing was hesitant on accepting the money when she didn't feel like she'd earned it. However, Su Yang insisted, and this spirit stone would definitely help with their condition.

"Are you not worried that I might accept this spirit stone and not show up tomorrow?" Mei Xing asked him.

"If that happens, then I can only blame myself for trusting you," he responded with a gentle smile on his face.

Chapter 958 Too Much Money

"T-Thank you, Manager!" Mei Xing accepted the spirit stone with a bright smile on her face, and then she bowed to him.

"I promise you that I won't betray your trust!"

Su Yang nodded, "Go home. I will see you again tomorrow."

Mei Xing then left the massage parlor, but since she still had plenty of time before midnight, she decided to visit an exchange store to see how much the high-grade spirit stone was worth.

These exchange stores were known as Spirit Stone Grand Exchanges, and people can exchange their spirit stones for a different grade of spirit stones. For example, one could exchange a single medium-grade spirit stone for 10,000 low-grade spirit stones, or they can exchange 1 low-grade spirit stone for some mortal such as silver and gold.

Fortunately for Mei Xing, she didn't have to travel far to find one of these stores since there were multiple of these stores in every district.

"Hello, I'd like to exchange this for gold." Mei Xing showed the woman working behind the counter her high-grade spirit stone.

The woman raised her eyebrow when she saw this, and she said, "I'm sorry, but I cannot do that."

"What? Why not?" Mei Xing asked.

"Because we don't have enough gold here to exchange for the high-grade spirit stone. You're simply asking for too much from our small store, young lady. However, if you want to exchange it for medium-grade or low-grade spirit stones, we have enough."

Mei Xing was speechless. This spirit stone was too valuable to exchange? This is her first time experiencing such a situation.

"How much is this spirit stone worth?" She couldn't help but ask.

The woman then pointed to the chart behind her and said, "Check for yourself."

Mei Xing then looked at the chart, and her eyes immediately widened with shock.

"A single high-grade spirit stone is worth 10,000 medium-grade spirit stones... And a single medium-grade spirit stone is worth 10,000 low-grade spirit stones... As for a single low-grade spirit stone... They're worth 100 gold coins?!"

Mei Xing immediately began doing calculations inside her head.

'If a single high-grade spirit stone is worth 100,000,000 low-grade spirit stones... How much gold is that worth?!'

Mei Xing quickly realized that she was unable to calculate the number simply because it was much more than her knowledge! As intelligent as she was, she never had the chance to study maths properly, so she only knew numbers up to millions.

However, while she cannot tell exactly how much this high-grade spirit stone was worth, she knew that it was too much for someone like her!

A single gold coin can feed their family good food for a whole week, and she would normally only get a couple of silver coins for an entire month of work.

To suddenly obtain such a massive amount of wealth overwhelmed Mei Xing.

'The Manager is giving away this much money for a month's worth of work?!' Mei Xing became even more shocked when she realized that she would be getting this much money every single month if she continued to work for Su Yang.

Then she made another realization— that even if they worked around the clock for an entire month straight that they'd not be able to earn enough to make any profits!

Not including the newly introduced priority system, if Su Yang worked around the clock, he'd be able to massage 48 people every day, which would amount to 240 medium-grade spirit stones, and if multiplied by 30 days, he'd earn 7,200 medium-grade spirit stones in a month, which is definitely a lot of money for a mere massage parlor.

But if a single high-grade spirit stone is worth 10,000 medium-grade spirit stones, then he would be short nearly 3,000 medium-grade spirit stones every month!

'How does the Manager make any profit if he's paying me this much money while earning less than? That doesn't make any sense!' Mei Xing was puzzled.

What is the purpose of the massage parlor if he's not there to earn money— even losing money?

'Maybe the Manager is earning money through other means that I am not aware of? Oh! Maybe the customers tip him enough for a profit!'

Mei Xing realized that she didn't account for the tips since some customers would give extra money if they were overly satisfied with the service, and that was the case for every customer in the Heavenly Massage.

'Still, the Manager is extremely generous to give someone like me so much money...!' Mei Xing sighed inwardly, feeling as though that she didn't deserve so much money for the amount of work she'd put in.

'Mother was right. Cultivators are extremely wealthy. Now that I think about it, spending 5 medium-grade spirit stones on a massage is too much money! Why are cultivators so rich?!'

Now that she'd experienced first-hand how rich cultivators were, her desire to become one grew.

"Do you still want to exchange your spirit stone?" The woman suddenly asked her, snapping her out of her thoughts.

"N-Not anymore. I apologize for the inconvenience." Mei Xing took back the spirit stone and began making her way back to the massage parlor.

And now that she was aware of the spirit stone's value, she made sure to keep it out of sight, afraid that someone might try to steal it from her.

After all, as intelligent as she was, if someone wants to steal from her, it would be as easy as taking candy from a baby.

"M-Manager! Are you still here?" Mei Xing called out to him when she returned to the massage parlor.

"Yes, I am. Did something happen?" Su Yang said to her from the massage room.

Mei Xing nodded and showed him the high-grade spirit stone that he gave to her not long ago.

"What about it?" He asked.

"It's too much money, Manager! I cannot even exchange it for gold coins at the exchange! And I cannot accept so much money from you with the amount of work that I am doing!" she said.

'What an honest girl,' Su Yang chuckled inwardly.

Chapter 959 Lack of Talen

"Too much money? I thought your goal was to be rich? Your actions don't match your desires." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"I want money, but I also want to earn it honestly! Furthermore, this is really too much money! No matter how much it's worth, if I cannot exchange it for gold or use it properly, it's no different than being worthless!" Mei Xing said to him.

"Is that so? Then what do you suggest?" He then asked.

"I'd like to be paid in coins instead! In fact, as long as I can use them, I will be okay with it!" She said.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Alright. If a high-grade spirit stone is too much, then how about a medium-grade spirit stone? I can even do low-grade spirit stones. I don't really have any mortal currency on me, so this is the best I can do, and you should be able to exchange them."

Mei Xing then said, "That's fine, and I am satisfied with just one low-grade spirit stone since it's already worth 100 gold coins. With this much money, we can survive for months without any worries."

"You don't want a medium-grade spirit stone? They're worth about 1 million gold coins each, you know?"

Mei Xing swallowed nervously at the tempting offer, but she had her own pride.

"I-It's okay! As long as I continue working for the Manager, I will be able to save up enough!" She insisted on taking a single low-grade spirit stone.

"I understand. I won't continue trying to convince you. Here."

Su Yang then handed her a low-grade spirit stone.

After accepting the spirit stone, Mei Xing said, "Manager, I still feel like I don't deserve this much money with the amount of work I do, so I'd like to stay here and work more. I cannot go home until midnight, anyway."

"Do as you wish, but there's really nothing here for you to do." Su Yang said.

Mei Xing then looked around before speaking, "I can clean the place."

"But the place is already sparkling clean." Su Yang smiled.

Mei Xing sighed inwardly. This is her first time experiencing a lack of work to do.

"Do you want to try cultivating?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"Huh?" Mei Xing looked at him with wide eyes.

"That's what I do after work, and you're already past the age where one would normally start cultivating. Have you ever thought about it? Becoming a cultivator."

"M-My mother wants me to become a cultivator because cultivators earn a lot of money, but we're too poor to buy any cultivation technique, and I don't want to burden her anymore," she responded.

"Well, I happen to have a couple of cultivation techniques with me that I don't use. If you want to borrow them, I don't mind lending it to you."

"R-Really?! You'll let me borrow a cultivation technique?! For free?!" Mei Xing's eyes flickered with excitement, as the only thing that kept her from trying out cultivation was the lack of cultivation technique and the money to buy one.

"Yes, but I will need to take a look at your body before I give you it so I can pick one for you." Su Yang nodded.

"Okay!"

Hearing his words, Mei Xing immediately began removing her clothes, becoming stark naked in just a few seconds.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows and said, "You don't need to strip naked."

"Eh?"

Mei Xing blushed slightly when she realized that she'd acted too hastily due to sheer excitement, something that she doesn't experience often.

Once she put on her clothes again, Su Yang said, "Lay down."

Mei Xing nodded and laid on the floor like she was sleeping.

Su Yang then used one of his fingers and pressed it against her stomach before using his spiritual energy to examine her inner body.

"Mmm..." Mei Xing made a weird noise as she felt something moving around inside her body.

The instant Su Yang looked at her body, he realized that Mei Xing had almost zero talent in cultivation, as she lacked the spirit veins to absorb Profound Qi properly, and even her body was only ordinary at best.

However, Su Yang didn't care about any of that, as he knew very well that one's talent could easily be altered through treasures. The most important thing was Mei Xing's dedication and her desire to cultivate.

"Alright, I have the perfect cultivation technique for you." Su Yang removed his hand from her body a minute later.

He then retrieved a scroll and began writing on it.

Mei Xing was puzzled by his actions. Why does he need to write on this scroll?

A couple of minutes later, Su Yang handed her the scroll and said, "Here's your cultivation technique."

"Eh?"

Mei Xing accepted the scroll with a dazed look on her face.

'Did he just create a cultivation technique on the spot?'

"Go ahead. Try to comprehend it."

Mei Xing nodded and took a seat on the floor before opening the scroll and reading it.

About half an hour later, Mei Xing finished reading the whole thing and placed it down. She then proceeded to stare at the floor with a pondering look on her face.

"What do you think?" Su Yang asked her.

"I can read and understand the contents... but... but I cannot comprehend it," she said.

Su Yang closed his eyes and said, "To be completely honest with you, you're not very talented when it comes to cultivation. In fact, your body isn't suited for cultivation at all."

"..."

After a moment of silence, Mei Xing sighed and said, "I figured..."

"Are you going to give up?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

Mei Xing frowned and quickly shook her head, "Of course not! So what if I am not talented? I am going to continue trying to cultivate regardless of my talents!"

Su Yang smiled upon hearing her words.

Mei Xing then picked up the scroll and began reading it over and over again until it was midnight.

"Can I take this back home with me?" Mei Xing asked him.

"Yes, go ahead. Just don't lose it." Su Yang nodded.

"I won't! I will protect it with my life!" Mei Xing said.

"Goodbye, Manager! And goodnight!"

"Goodnight. See you tomorrow."

After leaving the massage parlor, Mei Xing returned to the exchange store to exchange her low-grade spirit stones for 100 gold coins.

"Thank you!"

Mei Xing held the pouch of gold coins with trembling hands, as this was her first time holding so much money at once— not including the high-grade spirit stone.

She then raced back to her mother's room.

"Mother! Look what I got!"

Once she returned home and locked the door, Mei Xing poured all 100 gold coins onto the bed, shocking her mother.

"W-Where did you obtain so much money, Mei Xing?!" Her mother exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"D-Don't tell me you... You stole it...?"

"What?! Of course not! This is my salary from work! The Manager paid me in advance!" Mei Xing quickly explained where the money came from.

"The Manager from your new workplace...?" Her mother still doubted that she earned so much money working as a receptionist in a massage parlor.

"I am serious, mother! The Manager is a cultivator, so he has a lot of money! And he's very generous! In fact, look what else he gave me!" Mei Xing then showed her the cultivation technique she got from Su Yang.

"The Manager also lent me a cultivation technique! I can become a cultivator now!"

Her mother's jaw dropped. Just who is this manager from her place? Why is he so generous? It was hard to believe that he doesn't have any ulterior motives.

Seeing the worried look on her mother's face, Mei Xing placed the stuff down and said to her, "It's okay, mother. The Manager can be trusted. He's not like the others— I can tell that he's a genuine person. If you don't believe me, I can ask the Manager to give you a visit whenever he's free. That way you can judge for yourself whether he's a good person or not."

Her mother nodded, "Please do send him here. If he's truly as generous as you say, I'd really love to pay him back for it."

"Okay! I will let the Manager know tomorrow!"

"As for the money... Let's not use it for now." Her mother continued.

"I will let you hold onto the money, mother." Mei Xing said.

Mei Xing then started cleaning the room while her mother went to shower.

Half an hour later, they entered the bed and went to sleep.

The following morning, Mei Xing woke up at the same time and went to work.

"Good morning, Manager!" Mei Xing greeted him.

"Good morning."

"Manager, I have something to tell you." Mei Xing then said.

"What is it?"

"My mother would like to meet you. I know the Manager is very busy, but I hope you can visit her once. She thinks you're a bad guy, and I am having a hard time trying to convince her that you're a good person."

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I don't blame her for being worried."

He then nodded, "Alright, I will give her a visit tonight after work."

"Thank you, Manager!" Mei Xing bowed to him.

Sometime later, they began working, and Mei Xing greeted every customer with a bright smile on her face.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage!"

Despite working as a receptionist, Mei Xing was having fun doing her job, and compared to before when she had to force herself to go to work, she genuinely enjoyed working every second at the massage parlor, even feeling very enthusiastic about it.

'I hope I can work for the Manager forever...' She prayed inwardly.

Chapter 960 Visiting Mei Xing's Mother

After a hard day at work, the massage parlor finally closed.

"Manager, you were right. It's only been a day since we started the priority system and it's already widespread news. At this rate, we really might have to work around the clock." Mei Xing said to him.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Don't worry, I will limit the number of priority customers every day to five, and it will be on a first come first serve basis. Furthermore, there won't be a waitlist for priority customers so if they miss it, they will have to try again the next day. While there are some flaws in this system, let's just see how well it goes for now."

"Anyways, now that work is done, let's go see your mother, shall we?" Su Yang then said.

"Eh? You're going to visit her now? But she's still working." Mei Xing said to him.

"I know. I will visit her as a customer." Su Yang said with a smile.

"Okay!" Mei Xing nodded with enthusiasm.

After locking the store, Su Yang followed Mei Xing to her mother's workplace.

"Is that the Manager of Heavenly Massage? This is my first time seeing him outside his store." The other store owners were immediately attracted by his presence.

"He's the Manager of the Heavenly Massage? He's more ordinary-looking than I'd expected," said someone else.

"He's also much younger than I'd expected. Someone said that he was a scholar— or tried to become one, right? He does give off a scholarly aura..."

"Do you think he's single? Although his looks are ordinary, his hand techniques are godlike."

"If he's working in the City of Pleasure, there's a good chance that he's single. Don't tell me you're trying to start a relationship with someone so plain? You'll quickly become a laughing stock."

"So what if he's plain-looking? If he can please my body every day with his techniques, I wouldn't mind becoming a laughingstock, and I am willing to bet many of his customers share the same sentiment as me."

"Whatever..."

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived before this street that reeked of Yin Qi and Yang Qi, not to mention the constant moaning that could be heard. Although it wasn't as obnoxious as when his customers moaned, it was still pretty noticeable.

Furthermore, compared to the other parts of the Pink Light District, this street appeared to be less clean, and even the buildings looked a little run-down.

Su Yang glanced at Mei Xing by his side. To think such a little girl would live in this kind of environment. It was definitely quite pitiful.

"Manager, my mother works at that building." Mei Xing pointed at a certain building with a pink sign.

"Okay, let's go." Su Yang then approached the building, where a tall middle-aged man stood by the door.

"I don't recognize you. Is this your first time here?" The middle-aged man asked Su Yang the moment he got close.

"Yes, and I am here to see her mother." Su Yang pointed at Mei Xing, who was standing behind him.

"Hmm?"

The man finally noticed Mei Xing, and he said, "Her mother is fully booked for the entire week, so you'll have to come back next—"

Before the man could even finish his sentence, Su Yang retrieved a medium-grade spirit stone and held it before the man.

"Perhaps we can negotiate." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

The man's eyes widened with shock when he realized that Su Yang was showing him.

"I-I'm sure the other customers will understand, Esteemed guest." The man quickly changed his attitude and started treating Su Yang like a VIP.

"How long do you intend on staying?" The man then asked.

"I will stay here overnight. Do you mind?"

"N-Not at all! Esteemed guest can stay here for as long as he desires if he wishes!"

A single medium-grade spirit stone was worth 1 million gold coins, and this brothel had only mortal women. With so much money, Su Yang can have fun with every single woman in the brothel every day for a whole year and still have money left.

"If you want, I can even have the other ladies accompany you!" The man offered him every single woman in the brothel.

However, Su Yang shook his head and refused, "I am only here to see her mother."

"I understand. Her current customer should be done in a few minutes if you don't mind."

Su Yang nodded and proceeded to stand around with Mei Xing.

About five minutes later, a skinny man left the building with a satisfied look on his face.

"Esteemed guest, she's available now. She's on the 3rd floor." The man said to him.

Su Yang then entered the building with Mei Xing, walking up the dark staircase that only had enough room for a single person, and every step he took made the staircase squeak.

Once he reached the third floor and encountered three different doors, Su Yang asked, "Which room?"

Mei Xing quickly responded, "The room on the right."

Su Yang then knocked on the door to the right.

"Please enter." A gentle voice quickly resounded from inside the room.

Su Yang opened the door and entered the room, where a beautiful young woman could be seen sitting naked on her bed and with a soft smile on her face.

Despite being a mortal, this woman was incredibly beautiful— a natural beauty. Seeing her appearance, Su Yang understood why she was fully booked for an entire week.

"Mother!" Mei Xing entered the room a moment later, surprising her mother.

"M-Mei Xing? What are you doing here? Quickly, leave now!" Her mother spoke in a slightly loud voice, as she was about to receive a customer.

"It's okay, she's with me." Su Yang then said.

"Eh?"

Seeing her mother's puzzled face, Mei Xing spoke, "Mother, this is the Manager that I have been telling you about. He agreed to visit you when I asked, so here he is!"

"T-The Manager...?" Her mother stared at Su Yang with a dumbfounded expression.

Chapter 961 Mei Xing's Mother

"Hello, my name is Xiao Yang, and I am the Manager of Heavenly Massage. Although I am here to visit you under Mei Xing's request, I am personally interested in what kind of woman gave birth to such an intelligent little girl." Su Yang greeted her with a charming smile on his face.

"I didn't think you'd visit me so soon... I apologize if I've caused any inconvenience..." Mei Xing's mother said.

And she continued, "My name is Mei Ying."

"Then Madam Mei, I heard you wanted to speak with me? Oh, you don't have to worry about your next customer because I will be your customer for the rest of the day."

"Y-You mean you..." Mei Ying looked at him with wide eyes.

After a moment of silence, she continued, "Please, take a seat."

She pointed at the bed with her hands.

Su Yang nodded and took a seat on the large bed.

"Allow me to apologize in advance if I'd offended you for doubting you, but I was just worried about Mei Xing working for a place I have never heard of before. Can you tell me a little more about yourself? Why did you decide to work at the City of Pleasure? And what are your goals?"

"I don't mind. I completely understand your situation as a mother. As you already know, my name is Xiao Yang, and I came to the City of Pleasure to do what I enjoy doing after failing my scholar exams—giving massages. As for my goal... I honestly don't have one for now. I know that sounds weird, but I just want to experience working by myself until I have an idea what I want to do next."

"Eh? Does that mean you won't stay in the City of Pleasure forever?" Mei Xing was the first to speak after hearing his words.

Su Yang shook his head, "I do not intend on staying here forever. I will probably be here only for a couple of months— maybe a year at most."

"Is that so..."

Mei Xing lowered her head in a dejected manner after learning that he will only be in the City of Pleasure for a few months.

"Do you have any plans for after you leave the City of Pleasure?" Mei Ying suddenly asked him.

"Not yet, but I hope to travel the Four Divine Heavens and improve my cultivation some more," he said.

"Oh, right. Mei Xing mentioned to me that you are a cultivator and that you'd lend her a cultivation technique, not to mention her salary. Thank you very much for your generosity..."

"But are you sure you want to give her so much money? 100 gold coins is a lot for a month's worth of work as a receptionist..."

Su Yang smiled and said, "My business is doing much better than I'd expected, so I can afford to give a little more than others, and listening to Mei Xing's story made me want to help your situation out even if

it's a little. It must be difficult being a single mother while working in this place. If you need help, just let me know."

"Thank you, but just your thoughts are enough, and you've already helped us plenty by allowing Mei Xing to work for you. If she ever causes any trouble for you, please let me know and I will scold her properly."

"Mother! I won't cause any trouble for the Manager!" Mei Xing pouted after hearing that.

Su Yang chuckled, "I don't think I have to worry about that. Despite her age, she's very mature. In fact, sometimes I forget that she's only 12 years old."

"Yes, I understand very well how you feel." Mei Ying also laughed a little in a graceful manner.

Mei Xing's eyes flickered when she saw her mother laugh genuinely, something that very rarely happens.

After chatting with each other for almost an hour, Su Yang suddenly said, "Do you want a massage? I have noticed some stiffness within your movements. Maybe I can loosen up your body a little."

"A-Are you sure...? I don't want to trouble you any more than I already am..."

"It's no trouble at all, and as a masseur, I cannot ignore someone like you," Su Yang said with a charming smile on his face.

"I-If you insist... Please take care of me..."

A moment later, Mei Ying laid on the bed, her body still completely naked.

"..."

Su Yang narrowed his eyes when Mei Ying removed the blankets covering the bruises and scars on her body.

When Mei Ying noticed that Su Yang was staring at her injuries, she said with a bittersweet smile, "Please don't mind them. I have had a couple of rough customers throughout the years..."

Su Yang closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

He then placed his hands on her smooth body and began massaging her back.

Mei Xing watched Su Yang massage her mother from the sideline, realizing that this was her first time witnessing Su Yang's massage with her own eyes.

"Ah—"

Mei Ying released a soft moan when Su Yang began massaging her body, but she quickly covered her mouth with her hands, as she didn't want to make such noises when her daughter was literally in the same room.

However, it was incredibly hard to not moan when experiencing Su Yang's godlike hand techniques.

"It's okay, mother. Just let it out." Mei Xing suddenly said to her in a calm voice.

Mei Ying looked at her with wide eyes.

And she continued, "In fact, I can wait outside."

Mei Xing then started walking towards the door.

"It's okay, you can stay here." Su Yang said to her, and then he snapped his fingers, creating a formation around the bed.

"You can also let your voice out now. Mei Xing won't hear a thing as long as this formation is here." Su Yang then said to Mei Ying.

Hearing his words, Mei Ying immediately removed her hands from her mouth and started moaning in pleasure.

"..."

Mei Xing proceeded to watch as her mother display blissful expressions in silence. Even though she couldn't hear anything, it was clear that her mother was enjoying the massage very much.

Chapter 962 I Am Also a Doctor

"Mmmm~!"

"Aaaaah~!"

Mei Ying moaned loudly as Su Yang massaged all over her body, starting from her neck until he reached her feet.

Once Su Yang was finished massaging her back, he had her flip over so that he could massage the front of her body.

Mei Ying gazed at him with a yearning look on her beautiful face as Su Yang massaged her body with respect by allowing her to feel extreme pleasure without touching any of her private parts, keeping things pure for Mei Xing who was watching from the sidelines.

Of course, Mei Ying's lustful expressions were anything but pure. However, as someone who was born in the City of Pleasure, Mei Xing was used to these kinds of things, so she remained unfazed, acting like it was only normal.

After working as an escort for many years, Mei Ying has long gotten used to the sensation of 'pleasure', and she had even forgotten what it was like to moan genuinely after spending many years faking her moans to act like she was enjoying whatever her customers were doing to her numbed body.

However, after experiencing Su Yang's hand techniques, she immediately began moaning genuinely, and it felt as natural as breathing.

Su Yang continued to massage Mei Ying's body until he loosened all of her stiffened muscles, allowing her body to finally move properly.

The massage lasted for over an hour, and at the end, the bed was soaked in Mei Ying's sweat and Yin Qi.

"Haaa... Haaa... Haaaa..." Mei Ying finally had a chance to breathe properly when she stopped moaning, yet her body continued to twitch uncontrollably.

Su Yang removed the formation a moment later and said to Mei Xing, "I am done."

Mei Xing nodded and approached the bed before asking Mei Ying in a calm yet curious voice, "Mother, how was the Manager's massage?"

"..."

Mei Ying looked at her daughter who had a cheeky look on her face and said, "I can see why his massage parlor became popular in such a short time. I thought you were exaggerating, but after experiencing it for myself, I understand everything."

"Hehe..." Mei Xing chuckled after hearing her mother praising Su Yang's skills, acting as though she was the one being praised.

"How do you feel?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"I have never felt better," she quickly responded.

And she continued, "My body feels so relaxed but also different at the same time that I am doubting whether it's actually my own body or not."

"That's good to hear. However, no matter how effective my massage is, you still need to properly rest your body, so you should spend the next few days resting your body."

"The next few days...? But what about my work? I cannot just stop working..." She said with a worried look on her face.

"Don't worry about it. I will reserve you for the next week so you won't see any customers."

However, the worried expression on her face remained, and she said, "As much as I appreciate it... I have a lot of customers waiting for me... If I don't tend to them..."

Su Yang noticed a hint of fear within Mei Ying's voice and deep within her eyes.

'I see...' He instantly understood why Mei Ying was nervous about not working when he saw her reaction.

He closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

"Mei Xing, can you leave us alone for a few minutes?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"O-Okay." Mei Xing nodded, leaving the room the next moment.

"I-Is something wrong?" Mei Ying asked him afterward.

Su Yang created a formation around them again and said, "You know, I am not only a masseur... I am also a doctor."

"Eh?" Mei Ying's eyes widened with surprise.

"When I massaged your body just now, I also took a look inside your body, and you... You're sick, aren't you?"

Mei Ying realized where Su Yang was going with this, and her body trembled with fear.

"P-Please! Don't tell Mei Xing about my condition! I will do anything you ask me to!"

Su Yang narrowed his eyes on her and said, "If you continue working in that condition... You won't live long. In fact, you'll most likely die before Mei Xing could even grow up to be an adult."

Mei Ying's body trembled some more after hearing Su Yang's cold words.

She bit her lips and said, "I know, but I don't think that's a bad thing. If I die, Mei Xing will no longer need to worry about me, and she will finally be able to leave the City of Pleasure. As long as I am alive, she will not leave me behind, and I am nothing but a burden to her."

Hearing her words, Su Yang sighed out loud, "You know, I have met many women you like throughout my life— mothers who think they're doing their children a favor by dying. However, none of these women knew how much pain and suffering their children had to endure after their death because, well, they're dead."

"Why do you feel the need to die to give your children a better life? What sense does that make?" Su Yang asked her.

"B-But if I don't die, how will she ever leave my side? I have only been a toy for another's pleasure ever since the first day I became an adult! Someone like me won't survive for long outside this city, but Mei Xing is different! She has many choices in life! And with her intelligence, she will be able to overcome every obstacle before her! I am sure of it!"

Su Yang then said, "Honestly, I have no business in your situation, nor will I try to convince you to change your mind, but I will let you know that Mei Xing won't act like how you think she will once you die. She may be intelligent for someone her age, but you must remember... She is still a child."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang retrieved a pill from his storage pouch and placed it on the bed.

"That pill will cure your body, but whether you accept it or not will be entirely up to you."

Chapter 963 I Will Take Care of You and Your Daughter

Mei Ying stared at the beautiful pill sitting at the edge of the bed with a silent gaze.

"Also, I will still reserve you for the entire week, but if you want to continue working, that is your choice."

"If you're afraid of your customers getting angry and hurting you for it, you can quit working here and come to my massage parlor. It's called Heavenly Massage, and it's only a couple of streets from this place. I don't mind having an extra pair of hands around the place in case I need it."

"If you decide to come work for me, I will take care of you and your daughter for as long as I can. Although I won't remain in the City of Pleasure forever, I can help you leave the city and also make sure you have everything you need to live a peaceful life for the rest of your lives."

Mei Ying stared at Su Yang with her eyes as wide as saucers.

After listening to Su Yang's words, she couldn't help but ask him in a low voice, "Why...? Why are you doing so much to help us? You barely know us..."

Su Yang then said, "When I look at Mei Xing, I see an energetic and determined little girl who has ambitions bigger than she can fully understand. Even though I have only known her for two days, I want her to be successful in life, and from the way I see it, you are what's keeping her ambitions alive. If you die... so will Mei Xing alongside her ambitions."

Mei Ying was left speechless by Su Yang's words. This is the first time she has met someone who cared so much about her family.

"I..."

"You don't need to say anything." Su Yang interrupted when Mei Ying tried to speak.

"Take your time to decide."

Su Yang then removed the formation in the room and opened the door.

"Are you finished speaking with my mother?" Mei Xing asked him after seeing him leave the room.

"Yes. You can stay here with your mother for the rest of the day. I will return to the massage parlor. See you tomorrow."

"Okay! Thank you, Manager! I will work even harder starting tomorrow!" Mei Xing nodded with a bright smile on her face.

Su Yang patted her head for a moment before walking down the staircase and exiting the building.

"E-Esteemed guest! Is everything okay?" The tall middle-aged man greeted him.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Here's another medium-grade spirit stone. I am going to rent her for the rest of the week. Do you have any problem with that?"

The middle-aged man trembled inwardly when he felt a domineering aura that didn't match his appearance around Su Yang, and he quickly shook his head, "No problem at all. Mei Ying is all yours for the entire week, esteemed guest."

"Good. And in case you get any funny ideas, I only work a few streets away from this place."

"Absolutely not! I wouldn't dare to do anything funny!" The man said.

Su Yang nodded and walked away in a calm manner.

'Just who is that young man? I have never seen him before even though I have lived in the Pink Light District for many decades now.' The man wondered to himself.

"Is everything okay, mother?" Mei Xing asked her after Su Yang left, as she could feel that something was amiss about her.

"You look kind of sad..."

Mei Ying smiled and said, "You're just imagining things. Come over here so I can hug you."

Mei Xing nodded and got on the bed.

She then noticed the pill on the bed and picked it up.

"What's this?" She asked.

"Oh... That's a medicine pill the Manager gave me. He said it'd help with relaxing my body even more. Can I have it?" Mei Ying said.

"Here you go." Mei Xing handed her the pill while completely unaware of the true circumstances.

"Thank you." Mei Ying took the pill before hugging Mei Xing.

"Mother, you'll catch a cold if you continue being naked, and the bed is still wet. Allow me to clean it for you." Mei Xing said to her a moment later.

"Okay. I will go take a shower as well."

While her mother went to clean her body, Mei Xing changed the dirty bedsheets and blankets for new ones.

Once Mei Ying returned, she wore a piece of mature pajamas that barely covered her body which wasn't any better than being completely naked. Though that didn't matter once they went under the warm blankets.

"What do you think of the Manager? He's just like I said, right?" Mei Xing asked her sometime later.

After a moment of silence, Mei Ying nodded, "Yes... You were right. He's a wonderful person. If he stayed any longer, I might've even fallen for him."

"Oooh! Does this mean you will accept the Manager if he wants to be with you? I would love to have the Manager as my father!" Mei Xing quickly said.

"Let's not get ahead of ourselves, Mei Xing. We live in two completely different worlds, and there's no way he'd want a dirty woman like me." Mei Ying sighed.

"Mother, don't say something like that! You're not dirty at all!" Mei Xing said with a pouting face.

"Alright... I am sorry... I won't say something like that again— I promise," she said.

Mei Ying eventually fell asleep while hugging Mei Xing, as she was incredibly exhausted after receiving Su Yang's massage.

Once Mei Ying was deep asleep, Mei Xing quietly got out of the bed without waking her mother up, and she took a seat by the window where there was some light source, and she proceeded to take out the cultivation technique Su Yang gave her, studying it for the entire night without sleeping.

Despite her young age, she was aware that those without talents must work twice as hard if not even more than those that were born with talents. Thus, she could only sacrifice her sleep to try and cultivate, as she has work in the morning and half of the afternoon.

Chapter 964 Rowdy Crowd

"Mmmm..."

Mei Ying slowly opened her eyes, feeling a little drowsy from sleeping more than she normally got to sleep.

The first thing she noticed when she woke up was that Mei Xing had disappeared from her side.

Mei Ying thought that Mei Xing had already gone to work, but then she noticed the small figure sitting by the window.

Once her vision cleared, to her surprise, it was Mei Xing, and she appeared to be fully indulged with the scroll in her hands.

"Mei Xing...?" Mei Ying subconsciously called out to her.

However, Mei Xing didn't respond, almost as though she didn't hear her name being called at all.

Mei Ying then slowly got out of the bed and walked to stand behind her.

'Is that the cultivation technique she got from the Manager? How long has she been studying it?' Mei Ying wondered to herself.

This is the first time that she has seen Mei Xing being so absorbed in something before.

'She really wants to become a cultivator, huh?'

Mei Ying then recalled what Su Yang told her yesterday.

"Haaa..." She couldn't help but release a stressed sigh after remembering everything.

"Hm? Mother? Good morning."

Mei Xing finally noticed her mother's presence, and she stopped reading the cultivating technique.

"Mei Xing, how long have you been studying that cultivation technique?" Mei Ying decided to ask her.

"Ever since you went to sleep," she responded honestly.

"W-What? You stayed up all night?" Mei Ying stared at her daughter with wide eyes.

This is also Mei Xing's first time experiencing a sleepless night, as she would normally fall asleep before her mother due to her work.

"Yes."

"Are you going to be okay for the rest of the day like that? Won't you be tired?"

"I will be fine, mother." Mei Xing said with a confident look on her face.

"You say that now... But once the fatigue starts to kick in, you will regret staying up all night."

"I will keep that in mind." Mei Xing nodded.

Sometime later, Mei Xing left the building and made her way to the massage parlor for another day at work.

"Good morning, Manager!" Mei Xing greeted him, feeling a little different than usual when she saw him today.

Perhaps it was due to him visiting her mother yesterday, but Mei Xing felt very close to Su Yang for some reason, and she wondered if this is what it would feel like if she had a father.

"Morning." Su Yang greeted her back.

A few minutes later, they opened the massage parlor, and Mei Xing began greeting the customers.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage!"

Everything went well for the first few hours, but Mei Xing was beginning to feel drowsy when fatigue from missing last night's sleep started affecting her body and mind.

Unlike a cultivator that can operate without any sleep as long as they cultivated, Mei Xing was a mortal, and a child at that, so missing sleep really messed with her.

However, Mei Xing somehow managed to make it to the end of the day without falling asleep through sheer determination and willpower.

"Are you okay? You look like you are about to fall asleep at any second now." Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"Yes... I just stayed up all night yesterday studying the cultivation technique..." She said in a low voice, her body swaying slightly, clearly struggling to stay awake.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Let me take you back home."

"I apologize for the inconvenience, Manager..." She said to him.

"Don't worry about it."

Su Yang then carried Mei Xing on his back.

The moment Mei Xing felt his back, she closed her eyes and fell asleep.

Sometime later, Su Yang carried Mei Xing back to the hotel, and to his surprise, there was a crowd of people standing outside the place, and all of them were men.

"What's the meaning of this?! You told me yesterday that she will be available today, but now you're telling me that she won't be available for another week? What kind of fucking bullshit is this?! I paid in advance, you know!"

"Right?! I didn't pay you to keep telling me that she's not available! Why are you keeping her from us?!"

The tall middle-aged man showed a bittersweet smile on his face, and he said, "How many times do I have to apologize? It's not that I am keeping her away from you guys... It's just that she's been reserved by an esteemed guest... I have already offered to refund your money, but with none of you willing to accept the refund, there's nothing I can do..."

"You know what you can do?! You can let us see Mei Ying!" Another person there shouted.

Obviously, these people gathered outside Mei Ying's brothel were her customers— people that were supposed to see her yesterday and today, but because of Su Yang's actions, they were forced to wait an entire week.

"I'm afraid I cannot do that since the esteemed guest—"

"Esteemed guest my ass! You keep talking about this 'esteemed guest' but you have yet to give us a name! Who's this esteemed guest?! We'll decide if he's really an esteemed guest or not!"

The middle-aged man felt cornered, but as though the heavens had answered his call for help, he noticed Su Yang approaching them.

"E-Esteemed guest!" The man immediately called out to Su Yang.

When the others heard this, they all turned to look at Su Yang.

"He's the esteemed guest that reserved Mei Ying for an entire week? If you're going to fart, at least make it less obvious! How can someone like him be an esteemed guest?! He looks just like the rest of us!" The people there immediately doubted that Su Yang was the esteemed guest because of his ordinary appearance that had nothing 'esteem' about it.

However, Su Yang ignored the rowdy crowd and approached the building.

"Hey! Where do you think you're going?!" One of them called out to him.

Su Yang turned to look at him and spoke in a calm voice, "Where? I'm going to see the woman I paid good money for, obviously."

His words immediately left the crowd speechless.

Chapter 965 Mei Ying's Decision

"You're the esteemed guest? Bullshit. I don't recognize you. How could you possibly be an esteemed guest?" Someone there doubted him.

Su Yang snickered and said, "Do you know everybody in the Four Divine Heavens? If so, that's very impressive. Not even the Heavenly Emperor would dare to claim that he knows everyone in the Four Divine Heavens."

"You little bastard think you're smart, huh?" The man frowned upon hearing his response.

"Hey, Manager Shen! How much did he pay you? I will pay twice the amount!" Another person there suddenly said.

The tall middle-aged man turned to look at the man that just spoke and said with a bittersweet smile on his face, "He paid me 2 medium-grade spirit stones."

"T-Two medium-grade spirit stones?!"

The crowd were shocked to hear this. How could anyone be this wasteful with their money? A single medium-grade spirit stone could easily buy the women working in the brothel, yet someone had actually spent that much just to rent one for a week?

Although Mei Ying is the best worker the brothel has, even she wasn't worth that much money!

"Why do you all look so surprised? It's only 2 medium-grade spirit stones. Well? Are you going to pay 4 medium-grade spirit stones now?" Su Yang asked the person that just spoke, but that person immediately lowered his head to stare at the floor in silence and embarrassment.

"What? You can't afford it? Then keep your mouth shut." Su Yang suddenly changed his attitude, turning cold, and he narrowed his eyes on them.

"If you still have something else to say, you can tell me at the Heavenly Massage a few streets down tomorrow; it's where I work."

After saying these words, Su Yang walked upstairs, but nobody there dared to stop him.

"W-Wait... Did he just say the Heavenly Massage? That immensely popular place that popped out of nowhere just recently? He works there?"

"If I recall correctly, there's only a single masseur managing that place, and he charges an exorbitant price of 5 medium-grade spirit stones for a single 30-minute session, yet customers line up in front of his store like a group of ants!"

"What? 5 medium-grade spirit stones for a 30-minute massage? No wonder why he can throw money away in such a manner! That man is loaded with money!"

"Fuck! How lucky! I can only see the high-end brothels in the Red Light District earning so much money!"

The crowd outside the brothel eventually left the place after they realized who they were up against.

In their minds, they only needed to wait a week before seeing Mei Ying again, and it wasn't worth offending someone like Su Yang for a woman in the City of Pleasure.

Meanwhile, Su Yang carried Mei Xing on his back as he slowly climbed the staircase.

Once he reached the third floor, he knocked on the door.

"Who's there? I already have a customer." Mei Ying's voice resounded from inside.

"It's me." Su Yang said.

"M-Manager?" Mei Ying was definitely surprised to hear Su Yang's voice so quickly again.

"Please, come inside," she then said.

Su Yang opened the door and entered the room with Mei Xing.

When Mei Ying saw Mei Xing unconscious on his back, she began panicking.

"D-Did something happen to Mei Xing?!" She cried out loud in a terrified voice.

"Calm down, she's just sleeping." Su Yang said.

"She didn't sleep last night, right? Although she managed to work the whole day without falling asleep, she was on the verge of falling asleep at the end of the day, so I offered to carry her back, and she fell asleep while I carried her here."

Su Yang explained the situation to her.

Once Mei Ying realized that Mei Xing wasn't harmed, she immediately released a sigh of relief.

"Good heavens... You scared me by carrying her back in that condition. I'm sorry for the inconvenience, Manager." Mei Ying bowed to him.

"I don't mind it. She did a great job at work today, too." Su Yang smiled.

After putting Mei Ying on the bed beside her mother, Su Yang prepared to leave.

However, Mei Ying stopped him and said, "Please wait a moment, Manager."

"What is it?" Su Yang stopped walking and turned around.

"I have been thinking about what you said yesterday ever since I woke up..."

Mei Ying looked him in the eyes and continued, "Do you... Do you really think I have a chance of surviving outside the City of Pleasure?"

Su Yang then said, "What do you think the world outside the City of Pleasure is like? It's not like you cannot continue to work in your profession outside the City of Pleasure. In fact, although the City of Pleasure is one of the most popular places in the Four Divine Heavens when it comes to these kinds of stuff, it's not the only place in the world that has such an environment."

"The City of Pleasure is definitely the most popular and populated, but there are places out there that are far superior when it comes to the quality of workers and the overall cleanliness of the place."

"And with your appearance, I'm sure you can earn money no matter where you go."

Mei Ying sighed and said, "Although I may be good at acting, and my body is only good for pleasing others, I actually want to quit this job. I have hated this job ever since I first started, but because I had no money and nowhere to go after my parents dumped me in this place when they could no longer support me, I had no choice but to survive with this job."

Su Yang raised his eyebrows after hearing that she'd been abandoned by her parents. Is this why she didn't give up on Mei Xing despite knowing very well that she won't be able to support both of them at once?

"Then what do you want to do?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"I... I had dreams of becoming a performer before... I mean I am technically a performer right now, but this is not what I had in mind. I wanted to be on a large stage, but I am limited to this small bed for almost the entire day every day. I wanted to act and perform in front of a large audience, not for a single individual."

"However, these dreams are only the dreams I had as a child. Now that I am an adult, I no longer have such passion. Furthermore, as a mother, I desire nothing but the best for Mei Xing. I don't care what I have to do— even if I have to continue working as an escort, I want Mei Xing to live a good life."

Mei Ying suddenly got out of bed and approached Su Yang with unstable movements.

Once she was standing before him, she lowered her body until she was kneeling on the floor.

She then bent her body and kissed the floor with her forehead.

"Manager, I want to leave the City of Pleasure with Mei Xing, but I do not have the capability to do so in my current state. Therefore, I can only shamelessly ask you for help."

"I thought that it would be for the best for the both of us if I'd died, but after hearing your words yesterday and witnessing Mei Xing's dedication for a better future, I realize that I had made a grave mistake. I don't want to die prematurely... I don't want to continue living every day wondering if my next customer will kill me... I want to live... with Mei Xing..."

A gentle smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and he spoke in a calm voice, "I have asked you this yesterday, but I will ask you again... Do you want to work for me? Although I won't be in the City of Pleasure forever, I can guarantee you that you will earn more than enough to live comfortably for the rest of your life with Mei Xing by the time I leave."

"It would be my pleasure." Mei Ying immediately responded.

After thinking about everything for the entire day, Mei Ying has already decided to try her best to leave the City of Pleasure with Mei Xing— alive.

Su Yang nodded, "Great. Then you can start working tomorrow morning with Mei Xing. However, I don't really have any job for you at the moment, and you still need to rest, so your job for the next few days is to rest."

"As for your current workplace, since you will no longer be working here, you will need new living quarters. Until you find a more permanent place, you can stay in a hotel in the meantime. You also don't have to worry about paying for it since I will take care of everything."

"I really cannot thank you enough, Manager..." Mei Ying sighed, feeling a little guilty for receiving so much help from Su Yang without doing any in return for him.

"You don't have to thank me. I am doing this on my own accord— because I want to."

"Go rest. I will return early tomorrow morning to pick you two up." Su Yang said to her before leaving the building shortly after.

Once Su Yang left the place, Mei Ying went to retrieve the pill Su Yang gave her yesterday and swallowed it without hesitation.

After drinking some water, Mei Ying returned under the blankets and hugged Mei Xing's small figure until she fell asleep a few minutes later with a blissful smile on her face.

Chapter 966 Scarlet Phoenixes

"Hey." Su Yang approached the tall middle-aged man standing outside the building.

"Is there something wrong, esteemed guest? If this is about earlier, I apologize—"

"I don't care about that," Su Yang interrupted him and said, "Mei Ying... I am buying her from you."

"E-Excuse me?" The man looked at him with wide eyes, clearly doubting his ears.

Su Yang then retrieved a high-grade spirit stone and showed it to the man.

"This should be enough to buy Mei Ying from your store, right?"

The man's jaw dropped at the sight of the high-grade spirit stone.

However, as much as he wanted to agree, he was unable to.

"I'm sorry, esteemed guest, but I do not have the authority to make that decision." The man shook his head.

"You're not the owner of this place?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Unfortunately, I am only the manager of this brothel. The women are owned by another brothel, as this place is only a branch. If you want to buy Mei Ying, you'll have to visit the Scarlet Phoenixes at the Red Light District."

"I understand." Su Yang then left the place and started making his way to the Red Light District that is known as the most popular district within the City of Pleasure due to its high-quality entertainers.

Once he arrived at the Red Light District, Su Yang could instantly see a difference in the atmosphere and environment. Compared to the Pink Light District that looks like an ordinary restaurant on a dirty street, the Red Light District looked more like a luxurious restaurant with dazzling furniture and decorations.

Furthermore, there were beautiful women standing in front of nearly every building he walked past.

"Excuse me, can you tell me where the Scarlet Phoenixes is located?" Su Yang asked a couple of pedestrians for directions.

"Oh, it's right down this path if you walk 15 streets down."

"Thank you."

Once he had the directions, Su Yang walked straight to the place.

Fifteen minutes later, Su Yang stood before a majestic red building that had a red phoenix statue with its wings spread placed at the peak of the building.

"Hello, handsome. Are you looking to have some fun?" A beautiful woman wearing a revealing red robe approached Su Yang with a sexy smile on her face.

Su Yang looked at the woman with a calm gaze and said, "I want to see your boss."

The woman's eyes widened, and she said, "Do you have a reservation with her? The boss doesn't do walk-ins."

'The boss is a woman, huh?' Su Yang thought to himself.

"This is business-related," he then said.

"Oh? Can you clarify?"

"I'd like to buy a woman from one of your branch locations," he explained.

"I see... Please follow me inside. I will speak with the boss."

Su Yang then followed the woman into a guest room.

"Can you tell me about yourself so that I can tell the boss?"

"Xiao Yang, owner of the Heavenly Massage in the Pink Light District."

'Heavenly Massage? I don't recall this place in the Pink Light District. He must be new.' The woman thought to herself.

Although the Heavenly Massage is incredibly famous within the Pink Light District, it was still unknown to the majority of the City of Pleasure, especially the Red Light District, which is at the center of the city whilst the Pink Light District was on the outside.

"Please give me a few minutes to speak with the boss."

After leaving Su Yang, the woman went to the top of the building and knocked on a door.

"Who is it?" A clear voice resounded.

"It's me, Third Phoenix. There's a guest who wishes to buy one of our girls from a branch location. His name is Xiao Yang, and he's the owner of the Heavenly Massage."

The woman said, addressing herself as 'Third Phoenix' since everyone working in the brothel was considered a 'phoenix'.

"Heavenly Massage? I have never heard of this place before. What about you?"

The door opened, and an extremely beautiful woman with long red hair and sharp phoenix eyes appeared before the woman.

"I haven't heard of them either, so it must be pretty new."

The red-haired woman then said, "What do you think? Do you think he's worth my time?"

The woman pondered for a moment before speaking, "He looks pretty ordinary and young on the surface, but there's this unfathomable demeanor around him that I cannot describe. The way he looked at me also gave me chills for some reason."

"This is the first time I have seen you speak about someone in such a manner. Now I really want to meet him..." The red-haired woman licked her lips.

The woman then led her to the guest room.

Hearing the door open after a couple of knocks, Su Yang turned to look at the entrance, where the woman returned with a red-haired beauty.

"My name is Feng Tianwei, owner of the Scarlet Phoenix as well as multiple branches across the City of Pleasure. I heard you want to buy one of my small phoenixes?"

Su Yang nodded with a charming smile on his face, and he bowed to her in a respectful manner, "My name is Xiao Yang. I am the owner of Heavenly Massage, a newly opened massage parlor in the Pink Light District. I was fortunate enough to encounter a woman named Mei Ying working in the Pink Light District, and I have been captivated by her, so I have come here to buy her from you."

"The phoenixes working in the Pink Light District are all mortals, but that doesn't mean they'll be cheap. How much are you willing to pay?"

"I will leave that decision up to you, Madam Feng." Su Yang said, still with a friendly look on his face.

"What if I refuse?" Feng Tianwei then said.

"Then I will try to convince you to change your mind."

"Oh? And how are you going to do that?"

Su Yang suddenly narrowed his gaze on her, and he said, "I can see that your shoulders are a little stiff. How about a free shoulder massage?"

Feng Tianwei and the woman beside her were taken by surprise by his response.

"Hahaha! You're going to convince me with a massage? You're a funny one, Xiao Yang!" Feng Tianwei started laughing out loud.

"Well, it's what I'm best at." Su Yang said.

Once Feng Tianwei stopped laughing a moment later, she walked to the chair and took a seat.

"You're right. My shoulders have been a little stiff lately. Let me see how good your massage is. If it sucks, I will tear down your massage parlor, okay?"

Feng Tianwei's words made it sound like she was joking, yet her tone was dead serious, and she even looked at Su Yang with a serious gaze.

It was clear to Su Yang that Feng Tianwei didn't like people trying to buy her girls.

"Sure."

Su Yang responded in a calm voice as he approached her.

'Oh? So he's willing to risk his business for this woman? I wonder who he wants so badly...' Feng Tianwei wondered to herself.

Although Mei Ying technically belonged to her since she worked for one of her branches, Feng Tianwei didn't actually personally hire Mei Ying, nor does she really communicate with the other locations that often.

In fact, even Mei Ying herself doesn't know about Feng Tianwei's existence, nor the fact that she was owned by Feng Tianwei despite working at that brothel for many years. However, this was pretty common within the City of Pleasure where branch locations are everywhere.

In the midst of Feng Tianwei's thoughts, Su Yang started his massage on her shoulders.

"Ah~!"

Feng Tianwei suddenly released a soft moan when she felt a sudden wave of pleasure in her body, interrupting her thoughts.

Third Phoenix's eyes widened with shock after hearing Feng Tianwei's moan.

'D-Did she just moan? From a shoulder massage?' Third Phoenix wondered to herself.

Feng Tianwei was also shocked that she'd actually moaned just now.

"T-That surprised me just now... Not bad..." she said a moment later in a somewhat stiff voice.

"I'm glad that you like it." Su Yang said as he slowly increased the intensity of his massage.

Feng Tianwei tightened her jaw trying not to moan again, but the shoulder massage felt too good.

'How is a shoulder massage affecting my whole body?! I have never experienced anything like this before!' Feng Tianwei cried inwardly.

"T-Third Phoenix... Can you go ask around about this Heavenly Massage?" Feng Tianwei suddenly spoke to her using spiritual sense.

"I-I understand..."

Third Phoenix knew that this was only an excuse to make her leave the room, but she didn't dare refuse and left the place shortly after.

Once they were alone, Feng Tianwei stopped forcing her mouth shut and loosened her jaws.

She started breathing heavily at first, but she eventually gave up and started moaning, and her body would tremble every time Su Yang pressed his fingers into her shoulder.

Meanwhile, Third Phoenix asked around to see if anyone had heard of a Heavenly Massage in the Pink Light District. Although her attempts were unsuccessful at first, she eventually found someone who had heard about it.

"The Heavenly Massage? It's a newly opened massage parlor in the Pink Light District, but it's been getting all of the attention lately, and from what I heard from my friend who went there, it was an unforgettable experience that left her body dehydrated due to how much she climaxed during the massage."

Third Phoenix was speechless after hearing this testimony, and her interest in this Heavenly Massage grew.

Chapter 967 Help Me Climax!

"Mmmm~!"

"Aaaahhh~!"

Feng Tianwei moaned without restraint a few minutes into the shoulder massage, feeling tingly all over her body.

After a few more minutes, she suddenly turned around and grabbed Su Yang by his wrist.

"Is there something wrong?" Su Yang remained calm and asked her.

"I have changed my mind. If you want to buy my phoenixes, you will have to make me climax," she said while staring at him with a narrowed gaze, her eyes filled with lust.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows upon hearing this, and he spoke, "How do I know that you'll keep your words this time and won't try to change it again?"

"You don't," she quickly responded.

"Fair enough." Su Yang said with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Let's go somewhere more comfortable." Feng Yuxiang stood up and walked to the door, but her movements were a little sluggish.

Feng Tianwei acted like she didn't notice it and escorted Su Yang to her bedroom.

Once they were inside the luxurious bedroom, Feng Tianwei sat on her red bed and said, "So how will you make me climax? I'll let you know that nobody has been able to make me climax for the past 200 years."

"I will be giving you a massage, of course. It's what I do," he said in a calm voice.

Feng Tianwei sneered, "If you think you can make me climax with just your hands, you're vastly overestimating yourself. Although your shoulder massage felt great, it wasn't enough to satisfy me."

"We won't know until we try."

Feng Tianwei no longer said anything else and removed her clothes, showing Su Yang her beautiful body that had phoenix art engraved onto her entire back.

A few moments later, Su Yang approached the bed and started massaging her back, slowly working around her body, but he purposefully avoided Feng Tianwei's sensitive areas.

Of course, Feng Tianwei would moan quite often throughout the massage, but her body was actually nowhere near reaching the climax point.

"Is this all you got? If so, you won't be able to buy your beloved at this rate." Feng Tianwei said to him a few minutes into the massage when Su Yang was just casually caressing her back.

"I am just getting started."

After saying those words, Su Yang suddenly pressed his fingers into her body, pressing all ten of her vital spots at once.

"Aaaaah~!"

Feng Tianwei released a sharp moan, and her lower body began drooling with Yin Qi.

With a single movement, Su Yang had managed to stimulate Feng Tianwei's body from zero to a hundred.

If Feng Tianwei hadn't resisted her urges at the last second, she would've climaxed on the spot.

'W-What was that just now?! What kind of technique did he just use?!' Feng Tianwei cried inwardly as Su Yang kept his fingers pressing on her vital spots, keeping her body on the verge of climaxing.

Su Yang kept his fingers pressed on Feng Tianwei's body for ten whole seconds. Luckily for Feng Tianwei, Su Yang removed his fingers after ten seconds, or she would've climaxed if he was even a second late.

Of course, Su Yang was aware of this, but he didn't want to defeat Feng Tianwei so easily, barely letting her endure it.

"I am finished with your back. Can you turn around now so that I can work the front?" Su Yang asked her.

However, Feng Tianwei remained faced-down for another minute before she eventually turned around with a weird look on her face.

Su Yang acted like he didn't notice it and started massaging her front body, and once again, he purposefully avoided her sensitive areas so that she could rest.

This time, Feng Tianwei didn't utter a single word and allowed Su Yang to do his thing.

Many minutes later, Su Yang slowly caressed her body until his hands were slightly below her belly.

Then, without any warnings, Su Yang suddenly pressed his fingers into her skin again, immediately sending waves of pleasure throughout Feng Tianwei's body.

Feng Tianwei's body trembled in response, and her lower lips leaked a lot more Yin Qi than previously.

Su Yang acted like he didn't notice it and continued to tease Feng Tianwei's body, keeping her body on the verge of climaxing.

Of course, if Feng Tianwei wasn't so stubborn, she would've already climaxed when Su Yang used his technique for the first time. But since she threw away that chance just to defeat him, she unknowingly screwed herself over.

Now Su Yang was in complete control, meaning if he didn't want Feng Tianwei to climax, she would not climax no matter how much wants to.

Thus, Su Yang proceeded to spend the next fifteen minutes just teasing Feng Tianwei's body until she was able to climax, but he would suddenly stop before she could actually climax and return to casually massaging her body.

Feng Tianwei eventually realized that Su Yang was playing with her, so she exploded with anger, "Are you messing with me?!"

"What do you mean?" Su Yang asked her, feigning ignorance.

"You could've made me climax multiple times now, but you would suddenly stop whenever I am on the verge of climaxing! You're definitely doing this on purpose! You dare mess with me, Feng Tianwei?! I definitely won't sell my girl to you now!"

Hearing her words, Su Yang stopped his movements entirely, and he said, "I understand."

He then got off the bed and started making his way towards the exit, leaving Feng Tianwei speechless.

"W-Where do you think you are going?!" She called out to him.

"Hmm? I am leaving. If you're not going to sell her to me, I have no reason to be here." Su Yang said in a calm voice.

Feng Tianwei gritted her teeth in anger, yet she didn't dare to say anything rude.

After 200 years, she has finally managed to find someone who could make her climax, and her body was screaming for satisfaction due to Su Yang's constant teasing, so she couldn't afford to make Su Yang leave now, or she will remain sexually frustrated for heaven-knows-how-long.

"Come back! If you help me climax, I will sell her to you— No! I will give her to you for free! I swear to the heavens!" Feng Tianwei swore a moment later.

"Good enough." Su Yang nodded after hearing her words, and he returned to the bed.

Once he was beside her body again, Su Yang went straight for the slit between her legs and began massaging it.

"Ooooh~!"

Feng Tianwei's body quickly experienced a massive tremor, and she could feel her body skyrocketing to the climax once again.

Su Yang didn't stop this time and continued to massage her slit and its pink pearl, even sticking a few of his fingers inside the cave to stimulate her body further.

A few seconds later—

"Aaaaah~!"

Feng Tianwei's body jumped uncontrollably as her lower cave gushed with Yin Qi that sprayed all over the bed and floor, even reaching the wall many meters away.

Su Yang didn't say anything and allowed Feng Tianwei to rest on the bed until she could finally think properly again.

Many minutes later, Feng Tianwei asked him, "What would it take for me to experience climax using the thing between your legs? Don't worry, I will keep my promise and give you that woman you're so interested in even if you don't agree."

Su Yang remained silent for a second before speaking, "If you visit me at the Heavenly Massage as a client and ask me then, I will think about it."

"..."

Feng Tianwei didn't say anything after that.

Once she was able to move her body again, she retrieved a scroll and said to him, "Her name was Mei Ying, right? Show this scroll to the manager working at that place, then you can take that woman with you."

Su Yang accepted the scroll.

"Thanks," he said to her before walking towards the exit.

"Xiao Yang... Who are you, really?" she asked him right as he reached the door.

Su Yang turned around and said with a calm smile on his face, "I am only a failed scholar who decided to open up a massage parlor in this place."

Once Su Yang left the place, Feng Tianwei mumbled in a low voice as her gaze remained on the exit, "Mei Ying... What a lucky woman to receive his attention..."

Sometime later, Feng Tianwei called Third Phoenix to her room.

"Did you learn anything about the Heavenly Massage and that masseur?"

Third Phoenix nodded and began telling Feng Tianwei everything she discovered about Xiao Yang and his massage parlor, but most of it was information given to her by his customers.

"Is that so..." Feng Tianwei mumbled as she laid on the bed and stared at the ceiling with a dazed look on her face.

"Is everything okay?" Third Phoenix asked her.

"I have a feeling that the City of Pleasure will have a new powerhouse in the near future," she responded in a low voice.

"Excuse me?" Third Phoenix raised her eyebrows.

"Cancel all of my appointments for the rest of the day and tomorrow, then reschedule it for another day." Feng Tianwei then said, and she continued, "I am going to sleep, so don't disturb me unless it's an absolute emergency."

"I-I understand. Rest well." Third Phoenix bowed to her before leaving her alone.

Once she was alone, Feng Tianwei closed her eyes and quickly fell asleep on her large bed that was still soaked in her Yin Qi.

When she woke up the following day, Feng Tianwei changed her clothes and left the Scarlet Phoenixes, making her way to the Pink Light District.

Chapter 968 Leaving the Brothel

After leaving the Scarlet Phoenixes, Su Yang returned to the Pink Light District and showed the tall middle-aged man the scroll he'd obtained from Feng Tianwei.

"Heavens... You actually managed to buy Mei Ying?" The man was greatly surprised since he was aware of how difficult it was to buy their women, as many customers have tried to in the past but to no avail.

Once the man confirmed that the stamp on the scroll belonged to Feng Tianwei, the man nodded, "I understand. Mei Ying is no longer part of the brothel. I will give you her ownership papers in a few minutes, please wait here while I look for it."

'Ownership papers?' Su Yang raised his eyebrows, feeling like he was buying a slave from them.

A few minutes later, the man handed Su Yang Mei Ying's ownership paper and said, "As long as you have this, Mei Ying is yours."

Su Yang accepted the paper and looked at it for a second before using his alchemy flames to burn it until there was nothing left.

His actions left the middle-aged man speechless, but Mei Ying was no longer his problem, so he didn't really care about it.

"I will return tomorrow for her."

Su Yang then left the place and returned to the massage parlor to cultivate until morning.

"Good morning, mother." Mei Xing woke up later than her mother, which was very rare.

And to her surprise, Mei Ying was packing for some reason.

"Morning, Mei Xing."

"What are you doing?" Mei Xing asked her.

"A little something," she responded with a mysterious smile on her face.

Mei Xing tilted her head in a puzzled manner, but she didn't continue to ask since she knew that Mei Ying was keeping it a secret for some reason.

Once Mei Xing finished washing her face, she prepared to leave.

"I am going to work now, mother," she said as she approached the door.

However, right as she reached the door, someone knocked on it.

"It's me, Xiao Yang."

"Manager? What are you doing here so early in the morning?" Mei Xing asked him after opening the door.

"I'm here to escort you to your new living quarters," he said.

"Eh? New living quarters? We're moving?" Mei Xing turned to look at her mother with a questioning expression on her small and cute face.

"Yes, we're going to move out and live somewhere else starting today."

"W-Why?" Mei Xing asked.

"You'll find out later," she chuckled.

"Have you finished packing?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"Yes, there wasn't much to pack anyway."

Su Yang then used his storage ring to carry the luggage and said, "Let's go. I have already picked a place for you."

"Thank you." Mei Xing nodded.

As Mei Ying approached the door, Su Yang noticed that she was having difficulty walking, most likely because her body was still recovering.

He then lowered his body and showed his back to her and said, "I will carry you."

"I-I don't dare to inconvenience you any further..." Mei Ying kindly refused.

"It's okay. I am a cultivator, so I most likely won't even feel your weight," he insisted.

Mei Ying eventually gave in and nodded her head.

She then laid her light body on Su Yang's back.

Su Yang stood up a moment later, carrying her on his back.

Mei Ying quickly began blushing. Although she looked like she was in her early twenties, she was actually in her late thirties, and it was embarrassing for someone at her age to be carried around in such a manner.

Mei Xing stared at her mother and Su Yang with a profound look on her face, but she remained silent.

Sometime later, Su Yang walked downstairs and left the building with Mei Xing following behind them.

They then walked to the hotel that was only a street away from the Heavenly Massage.

Of course, they attracted a lot of attention, especially since almost everyone in the Pink Light District knew of Su Yang's reputation.

"Who's the woman being carried by Xiao Yang?"

"No clue."

"Hey, I recognize her. She's a pretty popular escort for mortals from a cheap brothel not far from here. What's she doing with someone like Xiao Yang?"

"They look pretty intimate with each other. Do you think they're 'that'?"

"Impossible. There's no way Xiao Yang would have any special relationship with a mortal whore when he has hundreds of beautiful women lining up at his business every day. He's probably just helping her."

Once they arrived at the hotel, Mei Xing looked up at the tall and luxurious building in front of them with a dazed face.

"W-We're going to live here? Mother, I don't think we will have the money to live at such a luxurious place even with my income..." Mei Xing said a moment later.

Mei Ying looked at Su Yang from behind and said in a surprised voice, "M-Manager, are you sure? This place looks incredibly expensive. We will be satisfied even if it's just an ordinary hotel."

"This is the only place near the Heavenly Massage that still has available rooms," he said in a calm voice.

"W-We can walk even if it's a little far," she then said.

Su Yang smiled and said, "It's okay."

He then walked inside the building and teleported to the top floor using a minor teleport within the hotel.

"Here's your room. I have already rented out this room for an entire year so you don't have to worry about that."

"An entire year? Manager, how much did it cost?" Mei Xing couldn't help but ask.

"If I tell you, you'll have to pay me back the full amount, okay?" Su Yang said to her with a joking smile on his face.

However, Mei Xing took his joke seriously and immediately began sweating.

"I-I will try my best to pay it back even if I have to sell my body!" she responded in a shaky voice.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I am only joking. You don't have to pay me back."

"Mei Xing, I have told you multiple times that you shouldn't even think about selling your body! Unlike me, your body is still pure and very precious, so you must keep it pure for your significant other in the future!" Mei Ying scolded her afterward.

"Manager, you can put me down now," she then said to him.

Once Su Yang put her down, she bowed to him, "Thank you for carrying me all the way here."

Su Yang nodded, and then he handed her the keys to the room.

"Go rest. If you need anything, you can just speak with one of the workers standing by in the hallway. They will be there all day. I have to open up the store soon, so I will speak with you later."

Su Yang left the hotel shortly later.

"See you later, mother!"

Mei Xing said to her before following Su Yang.

Once she was alone, Mei Ying laid on the bed and proceeded to stare at the beautiful ceiling with a dazed look on her face.

She would remain in that state for many minutes while wondering if she was dreaming before falling asleep.

After returning to the massage parlor, Su Yang immediately opened up the store.

'Mother still hasn't said anything about why we suddenly had to move. The Manager even paid for the hotel...' Mei Xing wondered this for the remainder of the day while she greeted the customers.

About two hours after the Heavenly Massage opened, the business owners in the Pink Light District were surprised to see a certain individual from the Red Light District show up in their district.

"H-Hey, isn't that Madam Feng Tianwei from the Red Light District? What's someone like her doing out here in the Pink Light District?"

"I have no idea, but it's not often you see people from the Red Light District here. I think it's been over 10 years since someone from the Red Light District visited this place, and that person wasn't even nearly as influential as Madam Feng!"

"L-Look! She's actually lining up with the others at the Heavenly Massage! Don't tell me that she came all the way here just to get a massage?!"

The business owners were shocked to see the famous Feng Tianwei standing in line outside a massage parlor like an ordinary customer.

Although Su Yang's massage parlor is incredibly famous within the Pink Light District, it has not seen a famous or influential customer until Feng Tianwei showed up.

"Once news spreads that even Madam Feng from the Red Light District showed up for his massage, his massage parlor will blow up even more!"

The business owners there were in awe but also envied Su Yang's business that had exceeded all of their expectations, and it was all done in such a short time.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage!" Mei Xing greeted Feng Tianwei when it was finally her turn.

Feng Tianwei raised her eyebrow at this little girl working as the receptionist. This massage parlor was more eccentric than she'd anticipated, and the environment didn't match the quality of this place.

In her eyes, the Heavenly Massage was a cheap place with a real dragon upholding it, something one wouldn't normally expect.

"I want a massage," she said to Mei Xing.

"The waitlist is currently three weeks long if you don't mind."

"T-Three weeks?!" Feng Tianwei was shocked to hear this.

Although she knew this place was popular from the rumors and because of the number of customers waiting outside, she didn't expect it to have a waitlist for 3 whole weeks.

However, this was a problem. Would she be able to endure waiting three more weeks before she could experience Su Yang's massage again?

Chapter 969 Is That Your Real Size?

"Can I pay extra to skip the line?" Feng Tianwei decided to ask, as she wasn't willing to wait 3 weeks for a massage.

"Yes, there is a priority system. If you pay 15 medium-grade spirit stones, you get to skip the line for that day, but you will still have to wait until the end of the day when the store closes. However, all of the slots today are already full even for priority." Mei Xing said.

"Can I just pay for tomorrow's priority?" Feng Tianwei asked the obvious.

Mei Xing shook her head and said, "Unfortunately, to keep things fair for everyone, we do not have a waitlist for priority. It's a first come first serve basis."

"So I just have to be here early to get a slot, right?"

"Yes."

"I understand." Feng Tianwei nodded and left the store.

The day continued as normal until the massage parlor closed doors for normal customers.

Once Su Yang finished satisfying his priority customers, he said to Mei Xing, "You can go home now."

"I understand. I will see you tomorrow, Manager."

Su Yang smiled and said, "I think we'll see each other again sooner than that."

"Eh? Are you visiting us again?" she asked him.

"Yes, I have to massage your mother for at least a couple more days before her body is fully recovered."

"I see... Thank you for your hard work, Manager."

Mei Xing then returned to the hotel first.

However, as she left the massage parlor, she noticed someone standing outside the store.

"Excuse me, but we are already closed for today." Mei Xing recognized this pretty woman who wanted priority but was a little too slow.

"I know." Feng Tianwei said, and she continued, "This is for tomorrow."

"..."

Mei Xing silently admired this woman who was so dedicated for a priority slot.

She then left Feng Tianwei alone and returned to the hotel.

A few minutes later, Su Yang came outside the store and looked at Feng Tianwei.

"Hm? What are you doing here?" Su Yang acted surprised by her appearance there.

"I'm lining up for tomorrow," she said with a nonchalant look on her face.

"You know I can't let a beautiful woman such as yourself stand there the entire night, right? I won't be able to sleep peacefully knowing this. Come inside. I will give you special treatment just for today. You can consider it as my gratitude for giving me Mei Ying."

Feng Tianwei wasn't humble and immediately accepted his offer.

Su Yang returned to the massage parlor with Feng Tianwei a moment later.

"Please lay down there for me." Su Yang pointed at the mattress in the center of the room.

Feng Tianwei stared at the mattress and spoke in a low voice, "Why are you working in such a shabby-looking place? With your skills and popularity, I'm sure that you will be able to find a much better place than this dump— excuse my language, but I just can't comprehend your thoughts."

"If you need help finding a better place, I can help you." She then offered to help.

Su Yang smiled and said, "I appreciate your thoughts, but I am satisfied with this place. I can only accept so many customers a day, so even if I got a bigger building, it wouldn't change the number of customers I accept every day. Furthermore, with the waitlist being a thing, this place is usually quite empty."

"Whatever. It's your store, anyway."

Feng Tianwei then removed her clothes and laid on the mattress.

She immediately realized how comfortable this mattress was and said, "Hey, where did you buy this mattress? I want them for my brothel."

Su Yang chuckled and said, "They are custom made... by myself."

Feng Tianwei looked at him with wide eyes filled with disbelief.

"If you want a few mattresses, I can give you a couple, but it will take some time since I have to make them."

"How much do you want for each mattress?"

"It's for free... technically."

"I don't understand."

Su Yang then explained, "You don't have to pay a single copper for the mattresses, but in return, you'll do me a favor."

"What kind of favor?"

"It's quite simple, really. I just want you to spread your experience here to a few of your friends."

"So basically, you want me to advertise your massage parlor for you?"

"Pretty much." Su Yang nodded.

"I don't mind, but I won't lie to them. If my experiences are not satisfactory, I will tell them as it is."

"That's perfectly fine. I would never ask you to lie about your experiences at my massage parlor, either way."

"Then let's begin."

Su Yang started pressing his fingers on her back shortly after.

However, not even a minute into the massage, Feng Tianwei said in an unhappy voice, "Hey, I was prepared to stand outside for an entire night. I will be very angry if all I got out of that is an ordinary massage."

Su Yang knew what she was implying, and he said, "Don't worry, I know what you're here for. There's plenty of time, so there's no need to rush things."

Feng Tianwei no longer said anything and allowed Su Yang to massage her back.

"Mmm..."

Despite her words just now, Feng Tianwei was actually very satisfied with the massage that stimulated the lust hidden within her body.

And in just five short minutes, Su Yang managed to make Feng Tianwei climax with just an ordinary back massage.

Seeing Feng Tianwei twitching on the mattress while her lower cave flowed with glistening Yin Qi, Su Yang stood up and started removing his clothes.

Feng Tianwei turned around to peek at his body, and her eyes immediately widened with shock when she saw the massage dragon between his legs.

"T-T-That is your real size? You didn't enhance it with pills or something?" Feng Tianwei asked him in a trembling voice.

"Pills? Are you looking down on me? I will have you know that this is 100 percent authentic and real." Su Yang said while standing there with a prideful aura around him, leaving Feng Tianwei speechless.

Chapter 970 That Was Just the Tip

"Are you ready?" Su Yang asked Feng Tianwei as he and his majestic dragon stood before her.

Feng Tianwei swallowed nervously before nodding her head slowly.

Su Yang then got onto the mattress and positioned himself right between her slender legs.

Once he was comfortable, Su Yang began rubbing his hot rod between her slit that was drooling with Yin Qi.

A moment later, once his rod was soaking wet with her Yin Qi, Su Yang inserted the tip of his dragon head into Feng Tianwei's cave.

"Aaah!"

Feng Tianwei's body suddenly began trembling, and her lower body gushed with Yin Qi.

"Hmm? You came already? That was just the tip." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

He then started slowly drilling deeper inside her cave with his divine rod.

The deeper Su Yang's rod reached, the more Feng Tianwei's body released Yin Qi.

Su Yang's tip eventually reached the deepest part of her caves, but even then, there was some space left on his rod.

Feng Tianwei's cave was smaller than he'd anticipated, but the tightness of it was just as he'd expected.

"I will start moving now." Su Yang said as he began pulling his rod out of her cave.

"Mmm~!"

However, Feng Tianwei's suction was so powerful that it immediately pulled his rod back inside her cave.

Su Yang smiled and started thrusting his hips with more force.

"Aaaah~!"

"Aah~!"

Intense moaning filled the room, and Feng Tianwei felt as though she was in heaven.

Thirty minutes passed by in a flash as Feng Tianwei was completely absorbed in their cultivation session, and Su Yang didn't stop moving his hips even for a second the entire time.

The number of times Feng Tianwei climaxed during their thirty-minute session was too much to count, but it was definitely enough to compensate for 200 years of being unable to climax.

Su Yang unplugged his rod from Feng Tianwei's hole, and his Yang Qi flowed from within alongside her Yin Qi.

"You can rest here for tonight." Su Yang retrieved a blanket and covered her trembling body.

Feng Tianwei didn't say anything and closed her eyes, quickly falling asleep.

Su Yang then left the store and locked the doors before making his way to the hotel.

"It's me." Su Yang knocked on the doors.

"Welcome, Manager!" Mei Xing greeted him a moment later.

"I am here to give you another massage." Su Yang said to Mei Ying, who was sitting up on the bed.

"I will be troubling you again." Mei Ying nodded.

"I will continue studying the cultivation technique!" Mei Xing said as she sat on the floor and returned to studying the cultivation technique Su Yang gave her.

"Make sure you don't stay up too long, or what happened last time will repeat itself." Mei Ying said to her.

"I know, mother. I won't stay up all night."

Once Mei Xing started focusing on her cultivation technique, Mei Ying removed her clothes and laid on the bed.

Su Yang then created a formation around the bed so that they don't disturb Mei Xing's concentration.

"Eh? My scars... They're gone?" Mei Ying suddenly realized that all of the bruises and scars on her body had disappeared.

"The pill I gave you not only heals your body but also your wounds," Su Yang said to her.

"Such a powerful pill, it must have been expensive..." Mei Ying felt an urge to cry again while also feeling incredibly guilty for using so much of Su Yang's resources without doing anything in return for him.

"It's nothing much. I got it for free, anyway." Su Yang chuckled.

If Mei Ying knew that it was a pill personally concocted by the God of Alchemy herself, who knows how she would react, as such a pill would go for millions of high-grade spirit stones.

Su Yang began massaging her body shortly after, and her body felt vastly different compared to when he touched it during their last massage, almost like it was a new body altogether.

After the massage, Mei Ying quickly fell asleep on the bed.

Once Su Yang covered her body with the blankets, he removed the formation and turned to look at Mei Xing, who was still fully absorbed in studying the cultivation technique.

Su Yang decided to not bother her and went into another room.

Although he rented this hotel for Mei Ying and Mei Xing, since there was a second bedroom, he might as well use it.

The following morning, Su Yang left the room to see Mei Xing still sitting in the exact same spot.

Clearly, she'd skipped another night of sleep, but it wasn't intentional, she Mei Xing was simply so absorbed in her studies that she didn't realize how much time had actually passed.

"Hey, Mei Xing." Su Yang approached her.

"Eh? Manager? Oh, right. I should go to sleep now," she said, completely unaware that it was already a new day.

Su Yang chuckled and pointed at the windows.

Mei Xing followed his fingers, and to her surprise, there was light coming from the windows.

"You didn't sleep again," he revealed to her the truth.

"O-Oh no! It didn't even feel that long when I was studying the technique!" Mei Xing exclaimed.

"Don't worry, that happens more often than you think when one is absorbed in their studies, especially when it comes to cultivation techniques. Sometimes, years could have passed but it would still feel like days."

Mei Xing then turned to look at her mother, who was sleeping peacefully in the bed.

"D-Does mother..."

"No, she doesn't know... yet..."

"M-Manager! Can you please keep this a secret? I don't want to worry her, and I promise this won't happen again." she pleaded.

Su Yang smiled and said, "I wouldn't make that promise if I were you because you will definitely break it, as it will happen again. It's an inevitable thing that all cultivators experience— losing track of time, that is."

"T-Then what should I do, Manager?"

"Unfortunately, there's nothing you can do but accept it whenever it happens. Though, you will be able to control it in the future once you're capable enough." Su Yang said.

Chapter 971 A Second Receptionist

"I-if I can't control myself, can I inconvenience you to snap me out of my daze so I don't miss sleep again, Manager?" Mei Xing asked him after being told that she will experience this situation again.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "Unfortunately, I cannot do that, since it's dangerous to disturb someone when they're absorbed in cultivation."

"You may not be a cultivator now, but if I distract you while you're being enlightened, I could ruin your chance to learn the cultivation technique."

"I see... Then I guess I can only stop studying the cultivation technique for now..." Mei Xing sighed in a regretful voice since she wanted to be a cultivator as soon as possible to earn more money.

Su Yang looked at Mei Xing with a pondering look.

A moment later, he spoke, "I think I have a solution for that."

"Really? What?" Mei Xing looked at him with hopeful eyes.

"I can simply hire another receptionist and split your work in half, so you don't have to work every day, allowing you to have an entire day cultivating."

"Eh? If I work half as much, does this mean you'll also cut my income in half? I cannot do that, Manager!" Mei Xing quickly refused to have her work taken away from her, as that also meant less money.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, I won't reduce your pay. It'll stay the same."

"Then it'll make me feel guilty instead! I am already earning much more than I deserve. If I work any less, my guilt will..."

"You will understand everything later." Su Yang said.

After a moment of silence, Mei Xing asked, "When will you find another receptionist?"

"I have already found one, but that person won't be starting work until a little bit later due to some problems," he said.

"I see..." Mei Xing nodded without suspecting anything.

Sometime later, Mei Ying woke up from her sleep and said, "Good morning, Mei Xing..."

She noticed Su Yang afterward, "Eh? Manager? You're here so early today!"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I never left. I am currently occupying that room over there. I hope you don't mind me living with you."

"O-Of course not! You paid for this hotel, anyway! You can live here for as long as you'd like!" Mei Ying quickly said.

"Manager, where have you been living until today? Don't tell me you lived inside the massage parlor this entire time?" Mei Xing asked him.

"Yes, I have used the massage parlor as my living quarters since I didn't really need a room." He nodded.

"Unbelievable..." Mei Xing mumbled.

Sometime later, Su Yang said, "Mei Xing, can you open up the store for me today? I will follow you in a bit since I have something to talk to your mother about."

"Okay!" Mei Xing gladly accepted the task.

Once she got the keys to the store, she immediately left the hotel and made her way towards the massage parlor that was only a minute walk away.

"You needed to speak with me?" Mei Ying asked him after Mei Xing left.

He nodded and said, "I told you that I wasn't sure what to make you do even if you worked for me, right? I have a job for you now, but you don't actually have to do it now. You can start working after your body is healed."

"What do you need me to do?"

"It's actually quite simple. You'll be doing exactly what Mei Xing is doing right now."

"You mean as a receptionist? Having two receptionists is..." Mei Ying wasn't sure how that would work.

Su Yang then explained, "Don't worry, you won't be working at the same time. I will have you both rotate working days, so you will work one day while Mei Xing rests, and then Mei Xing will work the following day while you rest."

"This will give time for Mei Xing to study her cultivation technique and do other things, as she doesn't have much time to herself since she has to work every day, and if she does it after work, there's a good chance that she won't get any sleep since it's quite easy to lose track of time."

"I am perfectly fine with that. In fact, I was going to ask you to allow me to replace Mei Xing once in a while so that she could rest." Mei Ying nodded, agreeing with his plans.

"Great. Then it's settled. I haven't told Mei Xing that you'll be working with us, so I will leave everything to you."

"Thank you, Manager."

"Then I will see you later."

Su Yang left the hotel shortly after.

Meanwhile, after unlocking the doors and entering the massage parlor, Mei Xing was shocked to find a naked woman sleeping inside the massage room.

'T-This lady is the one from yesterday... Did she break in when we left last night?' Mei Xing wondered to herself, mistaking Feng Tianwei for a burglar.

'Luckily for us, the Manager doesn't keep any money in the store...' Mei Xing sighed in relief.

It was at this moment Feng Tianwei woke up after a great night of sleep.

"Mmm? Who are you...? Where am I...?" Feng Tianwei was still half asleep, and she'd slept so well that she had forgotten about the events yesterday.

Then she remembered everything and immediately began blushing.

'I-I actually fell asleep in his massage parlor?!' She cried inwardly.

"I will call the authorities if you don't leave!" Mei Xing suddenly said to her with a frown on her face.

"Authorities? For what?" Feng Tianwei looked at her with raised eyebrows.

"For breaking and entering!" Mei Xing quickly said.

"Is that so? Go ahead." Feng Tianwei got out of the mattress and went to wear her clothes.

"I-I will really do it!" Mei Xing continued.

Once she was fully dressed, Feng Tianwei returned to the mattress and sat down.

"I am waiting," she then said with a playful smile on her face.

Chapter 972 Can I Embrace You Tonight?

Su Yang entered the massage parlor a few minutes after Mei Xing opened up the store, and when he arrived, he saw Mei Xing and Feng Tianwei in the midst of what appeared to be a staring contest.

"What are you two doing?" He asked them.

"M-Manager! This woman waited until we left the store before breaking and entering!" Mei Xing said while pointing at Feng Tianwei.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows after hearing this, and then he chuckled, "She didn't break in. I was the one who allowed her to enter last night after you left."

"Eh? You did? Why?" Mei Xing asked.

"To give her a massage, of course."

"But you limited the number of priority customers we get a day... or did you decide to change it?"

"No, it's still the same. I was just doing her a favor since she helped me greatly. In fact, she's the reason why your mother was allowed to leave the brothel."

"R-Really?" Mei Xing turned to look at Feng Tianwei.

She then lowered her head and apologized, "I'm sorry for mistaking you as a burglar."

"Would a burglar even sleep in the place they plan on robbing?" Feng Tianwei asked her.

"N-Now that I think about it..." Mei Xing mumbled.

"Did missing a night's worth of sleep already start affecting your ability to think?" Su Yang joked.

Mei Xing didn't respond and merely blushed in silence.

"Anyways, I have already stayed here for long enough." Feng Tianwei said as she stood up.

"Don't forget about our agreement." Su Yang said to her as she made her way towards the exit.

Feng Tianwei didn't say anything and merely waved her hands in a casual manner.

The day then proceeded normally.

Of course, since Mei Xing didn't sleep last night, she started dozing off midway through the day, but she managed to endure it until the end of the day.

"Do you want me to carry you back again?" Su Yang asked her.

"Please, Manager..." she nodded, almost falling asleep from that movement alone.

Once Mei Xing felt Su Yang's back, she immediately rested her head on his back and fell asleep.

When Su Yang returned to the hotel and Mei Ying saw Mei Xing's state, she sighed with a bittersweet smile, "So she didn't sleep last night again..."

"I fully understand why you want to give her days off now..."

She then continued, "Manager, I think I can start working tomorrow."

"Hmm... Let me examine your body to see if you're able to work."

Mei Ying nodded.

Once he laid Mei Xing on the bed, Su Yang began examining her body.

Of course, even without examining her body, Su Yang was confident that Mei Ying was already fully healed.

After all, she consumed a pill created by the God of Alchemy.

The only reason he hasn't told her that she's fully healed was to let her rest more, as the pills only affected her physical body, not her mind.

"I think it should be fine if you start working tomorrow as long as you don't exert yourself too much."

"Great! I have been getting bored from lying in bed all day for the last few days!" Mei Ying appeared ecstatic that she finally got to work again.

Though she was more excited about the fact that she'll finally be able to assist Su Yang and repay some of their debt to him even if it wasn't worth anything compared to what he has done for them.

Su Yang then massaged Mei Ying's body for half an hour before retiring for the day inside his room.

However, about an hour later, Mei Ying knocked on his door.

"Is there something wrong?" He asked her.

"No," she shook her head.

And she continued in a somewhat timid voice, "I... I have been thinking about how I can repay you for everything you have done for us, but I don't really have anything of value besides my experience, so if you ever feel 'stressful', you can ask me for help, and I will do my best to relieve your stress."

"I-I know that my body is dirty from working many years in this city and that my body is pretty much worthless, but if you're okay with someone like me..."

Su Yang stopped his cultivation and stood up.

"Take a seat." He then pointed at the bed behind him.

Mei Ying nodded and entered the room before closing the door behind her.

Once she was seated on the bed, Su Yang sat beside her and said, "Even if you— or others— see yourself as dirty or worthless, you're nothing like that in my eyes."

"I don't judge a woman's worth based on their body or their background— only their character and actions."

"In my eyes, you're a hardworking mother who is trying her best to improve her daughter's life. That alone makes you more valuable than many people I have met in the past, and those people are all individuals with powerful backgrounds and plenty of authority within the Four Divine Heavens."

"Also, I am not fond of women using their body as a sign of 'gratitude' or to repay their debt, so if you're going to approach me, give it to me straight."

Mei Ying swallowed nervously after hearing his words, and she lowered her head, "I'm sorry. Please give me a second chance."

Su Yang nodded.

Mei Ying then stood up and walked out of the room.

A moment later, she knocked on the door and spoke from the outside, "Manager, may I have some of your time?"

"Yes."

Once she got his approval, Mei Ying entered the room and closed the door before walking up to him.

"Manager, I have been wanting to embrace you for a while now, but I never had the courage to ask, and with my daughter always around, it only makes things more difficult for me. Tonight... Can I embrace you tonight?" Mei Ying stared at him with an earnest gaze.

A smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and he nodded.

Chapter 973 I Might Get You Pregnant Again

"Come over here." Su Yang opened his arms wide for her after creating a formation around the room so that they wouldn't wake Mei Xing up.

Mei Ying nodded and entered his embrace.

Su Yang then laid on the bed with Mei Ying in his embrace.

They would stay like that for a few minutes while Su Yang enjoyed the shape of her figure and the fragrant scent coming from her body.

Suddenly, Mei Ying grabbed his hand and placed it on her chest.

"You can do whatever you want to me tonight..." she muttered in a low voice.

Su Yang then started feeling her round and soft breasts that fitted his grasp perfectly, almost as though it was made for him.

A few moments later, he laid Mei Ying on the bed, loosened her clothes, and proceeded to stare at her beautiful body with a look of admiration.

Mei Ying didn't shy away from his gaze and stared back at him with an enchanting expression on her beautiful face.

Su Yang positioned himself in front of Mei Ying's body before grabbing her legs and spreading it wide open.

He then lowered his body and started licking the pink meat that was inside her clam, savoring its taste and moist texture.

"Mmm~!"

Mei Ying tightly held onto the bedsheets as she experienced heaven from Su Yang's skillful mouth techniques that were just as good as his hand techniques, and her body would uncontrollably squirm around as her body grew more sensitive.

Su Yang continued to devour her body for many minutes until Mei Ying could no longer endure it.

After resting for a bit, Mei Ying said to him, "Please allow me to please you now."

Su Yang nodded and removed his clothes before lying on the bed with his stiff rod pointing at the ceiling.

Mei Ying covered her mouth in shock when she saw his sword. Despite working as an escort for many years with countless clients, she has never seen such a perfect and domineering rod before.

A single glance made Mei Ying nervous, but she was also intrigued and excited.

Mei Ying then laid beside Su Yang and started licking his hard rod.

She began with the shaft before moving to the jewels underneath, skillfully using her tongue and lips to please him.

Once his rod was fully soaked in her saliva, Mei Ying opened her mouth and swallowed the entire rod to the best of her abilities.

Of course, her mouth wasn't large enough to fit his entire rod, so she went deeper and made use of her throat.

It started slowly at first, but once she was comfortable with using her throat, Mei Ying would speed things up, giving him a loud and somewhat messy fellatio.

A few minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi inside her mouth after warning her, which went directly inside her throat and into her stomach.

Once it stopped coming, Mei Ying removed her mouth from his rod and panted heavily, as it wasn't easy trying to breathe with such a large object in her mouth and throat.

Mei Ying could also feel a warm sensation in her belly after swallowing so much of his Yang Qi, almost like there was a fire inside her stomach, but it wasn't painful, and it was actually quite the pleasant feeling.

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"Yes. You know, I have actually never swallowed before despite getting asked frequently? You're my first in that aspect," she said.

"It's an honor," he chuckled.

Mei Ying shook her head and said, "No, I should be the one feeling honored."

She then got on top of his body and started rubbing her clit on his rod, soaking it even more with her Yin Qi.

Once she was prepared, Mei Ying inserted his rod into her cave, but since it was her first time accepting something so big inside her body, it was incredibly painful, and it felt like she was dual cultivating for the first time.

"I-I am bleeding...?" Mei Ying was surprised when she realized that she was bleeding from her lower cave. Even though her cave was being spread to its limits, it shouldn't be bleeding.

Su Yang looked at the blood coming from her cave and said, "The pill that recovered your body must have also restored your hymen, so you're experiencing your 'first time' again. I noticed it when I was tasting it before."

"H-Huh? My hymen was restored? Can that even happen?" Mei Ying was shocked to learn this information.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Yes. In fact, there are even special cultivation techniques out there that can return a mature woman's body back to its pure state and technically make them a maiden again."

"Unbelievable..." Mei Ying mumbled in a low voice.

Once she snapped out of her daze, Mei Ying continued to push Su Yang's meatstick deeper inside her cave until it poked the end of her cave.

She then started moving her hips, riding his rod like riding a horse.

Su Yang watched as Mei Ying moved her figure in an erotic and graceful manner.

Many minutes later, they switched positions with Mei Ying being the one lying down and Su Yang the one doing the moving.

When Mei Ying felt Su Yang's rod twitching and growing hotter, she knew that he was close to releasing it.

"You can release it inside me," she said.

"Are you sure? I might get you pregnant again if I release it inside," Su Yang said in a teasing voice.

Mei Ying's eyes widened when he said that, but after a moment of pondering, she said with a bashful smile, "I wouldn't mind it if it's your baby..."

"Even though I will have to leave soon?" Su Yang asked.

She nodded with a resolute expression, "If I really get pregnant with your baby, I will take care of it even if you decide to leave us."

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, you won't get pregnant. I know how to control my Yang Qi, so unless I want to impregnate someone, it won't happen by accident."

Mei Ying was somewhat relieved by his words, but she also felt slightly disappointed to know that she wouldn't be able to conceive his child, as she was prepared to raise his child if she really got impregnated by him.

Chapter 974 The Effects of Feng Tianwei's Promotion

"Here it comes!" Su Yang warned Mei Ying before releasing a stream of hot Yang Qi inside her cave, filling it up immediately.

Mei Ying could feel her stomach bloating from the creampie that made her feel as though she was pregnant again.

"Haaa... haaa... haaa..." Mei Ying panted heavily afterward.

However, Su Yang wasn't finished, and he continued to plow her cave with his rod for many hours until Mei Ying fell asleep from exhaustion.

Of course, since Mei Ying was a mortal, she wouldn't be able to absorb his Yang Qi, so Su Yang purposefully released Yang Qi that didn't contain any spiritual energy within them so he wouldn't hurt her.

And because Mei Ying is a mortal, he wouldn't benefit from absorbing his Yin Qi either.

In other words, their session was just casual sex between a mortal and a cultivator, so it really couldn't be considered real dual cultivation.

After their session ended, Su Yang covered Mei Ying's body with a blanket and proceeded to cultivate in silence until the following morning.

"Mmm... Mother...? Where did you go?"

Mei Xing became a little nervous when she woke up without Mei Ying by her side, as she was used to seeing her mother when she woke up, so not seeing Mei Ying made her nervous.

"Mother! Are you here?" Mei Xing went to check the bathroom, but Mei Ying was nowhere to be found.

"Calm down. She's sleeping in my room." Su Yang suddenly came out of his room and said to her.

Mei Xing released a sigh of relief after hearing his words, but then she wondered why her mother suddenly decided to sleep in Su Yang's room.

Seeing Mei Xing's curious look, Su Yang said with a smile on his face, "I was giving her a massage, and since she didn't want to disturb your sleep, she came to my room, where she fell asleep."

"I see..." Mei Xing nodded.

"I am going to wash my face now! Oh! And good morning, Manager!"

"Good morning."

Once Mei Xing went to wash her face, Su Yang turned to look at Mei Ying, who was sitting on his bed and covering her naked body with the blanket and smiled.

"Thank you... I wouldn't know how to explain it to her, nor do I want her to know about it since it might make things awkward for us." Mei Ying said to her.

"Don't worry, I won't tell her anything. However, she's a smart girl. I'm sure she'll find out about it eventually if we continue doing this... unless you don't want to do it anymore?" Su Yang said with a slight chuckle.

"I-I want to do it again..." Mei Ying quickly responded with a somewhat red face.

Sometime later, by the time Mei Xing returned from washing her face, Mei Ying was fully dressed and waiting in the living room.

"Good morning, mother." Mei Xing said to her.

"Good morning."

Mei Ying also went to wash her face shortly after.

Once she returned, Su Yang said to Mei Xing, "Are you ready to work?"

"Yes!" She nodded with enthusiasm.

"Then I will see you later." Su Yang said to Mei Ying with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Yes, I will see you two later."

Mei Xing and Su Yang left the hotel shortly after and walked to the massage parlor together.

However, to their surprise, there was already a massive line waiting outside their building.

"W-What is going on? Why are there suddenly so many people?" Mei Xing was startled by the line that was so long she couldn't even see the end.

Although she was used to seeing people wait outside the store before it opened for business, this is her first time seeing so many people, and they all looked more wealthy and important than their previous customers.

"This must be due to her advertisements." Su Yang quickly understood the situation.

"Who?" Mei Xing asked.

"The woman you mistook for a burglar yesterday," he said.

"T-That woman? She was famous?"

"I don't know, but she owns a business in the Red Light District."

"The Red Light District?!" Mei Xing was shocked to hear this, and she said, "Only the most influential and successful individuals within the City of Pleasure are allowed to have a business in the Red Light District! I can't believe that I mistook someone like that for a burglar!"

Mei Xing was terrified after realizing this fact, as she knew very well that offending someone in the Red Light District was the worst thing one can do within the City of Pleasure.

If Su Yang hadn't arrived in time to clear the misunderstanding, she would've called the authorities on her! However, would the authorities that work for the City of Pleasure arrest someone from the Red Light District? She would end up getting arrested herself for trying to do so!

"Thank you, Manager, for saving my life!" Mei Xing quickly bowed to him.

"What are you talking about?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"If you didn't stop me yesterday, I would've offended that woman, which would be catastrophic for me and even my mother!" She said.

"I see..." Su Yang chuckled.

"Anyways, let's open up the store."

As Su Yang and Mei Xing approached the building, the people standing in line stopped their chattering and turned to stare at them.

"Is that the man that made Madam Feng climax with his fingers alone? I cannot wait to experience it for myself!"

"Madam Feng told me that she'd never felt such satisfaction before until she met him!"

"He looks pretty ordinary outside, but the monster inside his pants is anything but ordinary according to Madam Feng..."

"If even someone like Madam Feng called it a 'monster', it must truly be extraordinary..."

"However, with so many people here, it'll definitely take a while before we can experience it... even with the priority system."

"I don't care even if I have to wait an entire year! I will experience it!"

A few minutes later, once they were ready, Su Yang opened up the business, and Mei Xing would greet the customers with a nervous smile, as she felt a little pressured by the customers' overwhelming aura, feeling like she was suddenly tossed into the center of a building filled with nothing but rich and powerful people as a commoner.

Chapter 975 A New Receptionis

About two hours after the Heavenly Massage opened, a beautiful woman could be seen skipping the line and walking straight to the entrance.

When the people in line saw this, they immediately called her out.

"Hey! The line is back there! You dare skip the line so daringly?!"

The beautiful woman turned to look at the people before speaking with an apologetic smile on her face, "I'm sorry for the misunderstanding, but I am not here as a client. I actually work here."

"Eh?"

The people outside were surprised to hear this.

Since when did they have another worker besides the little girl working in the front?

After explaining the situation to the customers, Mei Ying opened the door and went inside.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage— Eh? Mother? What are you doing here?" Mei Xing was surprised by her sudden appearance.

Mei Ying chuckled and pointed to the uniform she was wearing.

Mei Xing's eyes widened with shock when she saw her mother's clothing that resembled her own work uniform.

"T-That's—! Does this mean you'll also be working for the Manager?!" Mei Xing asked, her voice filled with excitement.

"Yes, I will be working with you starting today. Though we might not actually work side by side since there isn't any need for the both of us at once." Mei Ying nodded.

"I have spoken with the Manager. He said that we can take turns working each day so that you don't have to worry about missing sleep from studying, and I want you to rest every now and then as well. It's not healthy for a young girl like you to be working every day, after all."

"B-But this job is easy! I only need to greet people and some other minor stuff!" Mei Xing said.

Mei Ying chuckled and said, "If you're worried about your salary being cut in half for working less, don't worry. The Manager said that he would count both of our working hours together, so my salary will also be your salary."

"If you say it like that... I guess so..." Mei Xing nodded.

Since her salary won't be deducted and she gets to study without worrying about missing sleep, she didn't have any reason to refuse.

'I have always thought about working the same job as my mother, but I didn't think it would turn out like this...' Mei Xing thought to herself.

"I will only be observing you today so I know what to do tomorrow." Mei Ying said to her a moment later.

"Okay." Mei Xing nodded.

Mei Ying then took a seat at the corner of the room and proceeded to spend the entire day watching her daughter working diligently.

Of course, since she was being watched by her mother, Mei Xing subconsciously worked even harder than before so that she wouldn't disappoint her mother.

'This is my first time watching her work...' Mei Ying held a motherly smile on her face throughout the entire day.

At the end of the day, after Su Yang finished massaging his last client for the day, he came outside and said while looking at Mei Ying, "Well? What do you think?"

"This place is much busier than I'd anticipated. I thought Mei Xing was exaggerating when she first told me how popular this place was..."

"It will only get busier in the coming days, so make sure you're prepared." Su Yang said with a smile.

Mei Ying nodded with a solemn look on her face.

"Anyways, let's go home."

They then returned to the hotel and retired for the day.

The following morning, Mei Ying said to her daughter, "Mei Xing, today will be your first day off. However, that doesn't mean you should be wandering the streets since it's still dangerous outside."

"I know, mother. I intend on staying here to study the cultivation technique." Mei Xing said.

"Okay."

Mei Ying then left the hotel with Su Yang.

Once they arrived at the massage parlor, Mei Ying took a seat behind the desk, something Mei Xing couldn't do because she was too short, feeling slightly nervous for some reason.

"You'll be fine." Su Yang patted her back.

"I will do my best, Manager," she responded in a resolute voice.

Before going into the massage room, Su Yang whispered in Mei Ying's voice, "If you want, we can have some fun in the back after the day ends. This is the perfect opportunity since Mei Xing isn't here."

Mei Ying's face immediately turned rosy after hearing his words, and she nodded in a bashful manner.

A few minutes later, the doors opened, and Mei Ying began greeting the customers.

"Welcome to Heavenly Massage!" Mei Ying used her daughter as an example and greeted them with the exact same bright smile on her face.

"The waitlist is currently at five months if you don't mind..."

"Yes, there is a priority system, but all of the priority slots for today have already been reserved."

"I'm sorry for the inconvenience, but to keep things fair, the priority system is on a first come first serve basis, so we can only take reservations for the day."

"Thank you for your understanding."

Time passed extremely quickly, and before she was even aware, it was already time for the store to close.

"Great work today." Su Yang said to her after satisfying his last customer for the day.

"Thank you... Mei Xing made it sound so easy, but it's really not as easy as she made it look. My voice is already starting to change from speaking so much." Mei Ying said.

Su Yang chuckled, "Don't worry, I have some medicine that will help you with your throat and voice."

"Thank you."

"Why don't I give you a massage? You definitely earned it."

Mei Ying nodded, and she made sure to lock the doors before following Su Yang into the massage room, where they would conduct passionate acts that couldn't be done with her daughter around.

But with Mei Xing in an entirely different location doing her own things, Mei Ying was allowed to go all out and act as her heart desired.

Chapter 976 Outrage

After spending an hour doing passionate things inside the massage room, Mei Ying and Su Yang finally left the store and returned to the hotel.

"Did you accept more customers than usual today as well, Manager?" Mei Xing asked him when she noticed that they'd returned later than usual.

"Y-Yes, something like that." Mei Ying nodded.

"How is your progress with the cultivation technique?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"Although I still don't fully understand it, I am starting to comprehend the beginning parts," she said.

"That's great." Su Yang smiled.

Sometime later, the mother and daughter pair went to sleep while Su Yang cultivated in his room.

The following morning, Su Yang and Mei Xing left the hotel while Mei Ying stayed behind, as it was her day off.

Once they reached the massage parlor, Mei Xing mumbled in a dazed voice, "There are even more people today than last time..."

"It will only become more crowded as time passes." Su Yang chuckled.

Mei Xing turned to look at him with a worried look, and she asked him, "Manager, isn't this pretty bad? The waitlist is already reaching half a year. At this rate, it will continue to grow endlessly, and with the number of customers we're accepting per day, we will never be able to clear this queue."

"Even worse, you won't stay in the City of Pleasure forever, so there will be a lot of heartbroken customers when you leave..."

Su Yang smiled and said, "You really care about the customers. Don't worry, I have something in mind. Although it's not perfect, it will definitely fix our problem."

"To be completely honest with you, the business grew quicker than I'd anticipated. I had planned on changing the system later, but since things are like this now, I will have to make some changes to my plan."

Once they entered the massage parlor, Su Yang began writing on a sign.

Mei Xing read the sign once it was complete, and her eyebrows would raise a little with every sentence she read.

"Manager, won't you anger the customers with this? They definitely won't like this change." Mei Xing said to him afterward with a fearful look on her face.

"I will definitely make many people angry, but this is the only way."

Mei Xing swallowed nervously, as she could imagine the mayhem the sign would cause once it's revealed to the public.

Sometime later, Su Yang went outside and placed the sign right beside the door so that it could be seen by everyone.

"Due to the increased traffic and demand, I have decided to make some necessary changes to our business. I hope for your understanding." Su Yang respectfully bowed to the customers waiting outside before returning to the store.

The people outside quickly gathered in front of the sign to see what had changed, and their eyes widened with shock when they finished reading it.

"Important notice: due to the increased demand and the waitlist growing too large, the price for each session has been increased to 100 medium-grade spirit stones. Furthermore, the sessions that used to last for 30 minutes will now only last for 10 minutes."

"As for those that are already on the waitlist, there will be no changes to the price, but the time for each session will be decreased to 15 minutes."

"The priority system will now cost 1 high-grade spirit stone instead of 15 medium-grade spirit stones."

The customers were dumbfounded by the notice that basically increased the price by an insane amount, and they would even receive a shorter session for it.

As Mei Xing had expected, the notice immediately caused outrage among the customers.

"How could you ask for 100 medium-grade spirit stones for a 10-minute massage session?! This is worse than robbery in daylight!"

"No matter how good your massage is, there's no way it's worth 100 medium-grade spirit stones, much less one high-grade spirit stone that's worth 10,000 medium-grade spirit stones!"

"Are you trying to kill your business right after it started getting traction?!"

Unhappy customers flooded the massage parlor, and Mei Xing was immediately overwhelmed by so many complaints.

"I...I..."

For the first time since she started working, Mei Xing felt an urge to cry from the pressure, something she hasn't experienced before even in her previous workplaces.

"Please calm down, esteemed guests. I completely understand your anger, and as much as I want to keep things the same, it simply isn't feasible. The waitlist is already half a year long, and it will only continue to grow longer."

"As grateful as I am that my business found success, I do not wish for my customers to wait years to finally receive my service, nor do I wish to stay in the City of Pleasure forever."

Although the customers were still angry, they couldn't find any faults in Su Yang's reasoning. Certainly, nobody there prefers to wait for years to get a massage from him, but the price was simply too expensive for the majority of them to even consider."

Perhaps they wouldn't have been as angry if the Heavenly Massage existed in the Red Light District where people are used to spending high-grade spirit stones without thinking, but because it's located in the Pink Light District, one of the cheapest areas, the ridiculous price only seemed more ridiculous.

"Hmph! I am out of here! And don't expect me to come back!"

"Me too! This is outrageous!"

The customers began leaving in droves, and within minutes, the long line outside the Heavenly Massage had become empty.

"Hahaha! What a damn fool to destroy his own business because of greed!"

"And here I was starting to think highly of that place! What a joke!"

The other store owners celebrated the Heavenly Massage's downfall.

"M-Manager... What should we do? Everyone left..." Mei Xing looked at him, her urges to cry growing stronger because of the result.

Su Yang showed her a calm smile and said, "Don't worry, everything will be fine."

Chapter 977 Vandalized

A couple of hours have passed since the Heavenly Massage opened for business, but Mei Xing hasn't seen a single new customer this entire time.

"Haaaa... I have never felt so bored at work before..." Mei Xing sat on the chair behind the reception desk for the first time since she started working there, as she would normally be too busy to even sit down.

The place also felt awfully quiet compared to before, making it uncomfortable for her, who wasn't used to this sort of environment.

A few minutes later, someone entered the door and asked, "Excuse me, is the sign outside real?"

Mei Xing stood up and said, "Yes, it is real."

She has repeated these few words so much today that she'd lost count.

"So I have to pay 5 medium-grade spirit stones for a 15-minute massage now?" The woman then asked.

"Unfortunately." Mei Xing nodded.

The customer clearly wasn't happy about the changes, but she had waited many days for this, and if she leaves now, she would have to pay 100 medium-grade spirit stones for a 10-minute massage if she ever wants to come back in the future.

Therefore, she could only grit her teeth and accept the changes.

"I understand... Here are five medium-grade spirit stones."

The woman paid the fee and proceeded to wait for her turn.

A few minutes later, someone came out of the massage room with her face fully flushed in redness, and she looked incredibly drunk.

The woman that was supposed to go next raised her eyebrows when she saw this, but she ignored it and went inside the massage room.

Once she entered the massage room, Su Yang greeted her with his head lowered, "I apologize for the sudden changes, esteemed guest, but the changes were necessary. In order to compensate for the inconvenience, I will work twice as hard to please you."

"I-I don't mind..." The woman nodded and quickly laid her body on the mattress.

Su Yang immediately began working on the woman's body, using techniques that he normally wouldn't use.

"Aaah~!"

The woman quickly began moaning even though Su Yang barely started his massage.

"W-What is this feeling?!" The woman exclaimed as she could feel every cell in her body trembling from excitement.

"It's a technique I learned in some ancient book when I was still studying to be a scholar." Su Yang said, making up some random excuse for the technique he'd created.

"Y-You read books meant for massages when you're trying to become a scholar? Couldn't that have contributed to why you failed to become one?" The woman asked.

"Perhaps... But I don't regret it." Su Yang chuckled.

"F-Forget the massage! I want you to massage inside my body with your thing!" The woman could no longer endure it and pointed at his pelvis area.

"Certainly."

Su Yang didn't refuse and immediately removed his clothes, showing the woman his stiff dragon.

"Heavens..." The woman muttered in a dazed voice as she was mesmerized by the magnificent view of his dragon.

Su Yang wasted no time and inserted his rod inside her cave that was already soaking wet from his minute-long massage.

Fifteen minutes passed by in a flash, and the woman laid on the mattress with a vulgarly satisfied expression on her face.

"T-That was definitely worth it..." She mumbled in a low voice.

Even if she has to pay 100 medium-grade spirit stones in the future for another massage, she wouldn't hesitate to do so. In fact, if she had the money, she would come back every day as a priority customer, as they were allowed to skip the line.

Every single customer on that day had the same thoughts as this woman after experiencing Su Yang's godlike techniques.

However, regardless of how much they enjoyed it, there were still little to no customers for the Heavenly Massage.

At the end of the day, someone familiar showed up at their door.

"Xiao Yang! How dare you make this mess right after I advertised for you!? Do you have any idea how many people came to me today to complain?! I have truly lost face today, and I demand an explanation!" Feng Tianwei shouted at him when he came out of the massage room.

"Do I really have to explain it to you? You should understand why I did what I did as a fellow business owner."

"I understand it very well, but I am asking you why you had to do it right after I advertised for you?! You could've waited a few more weeks before making the changes!!!"

Su Yang shook his head and said, "A few weeks? I might as well not make any changes since the waitlist will be years long by then."

"And changes like this should be made sooner than later, as the outrage will only increase the longer wait."

"Che!" Feng Tianwei sneered coldly.

"How about this? To apologize for your inconvenience, I will give you a free massage right now? It'll be thirty minutes long as well."

"Y-You're quite shameless, you know that, right?"

"You don't want it?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"I never refused!" Feng Tianwei said as she entered the massage room.

Su Yang then looked at Mei Xing and said to her, "You can go home for today. I will be with you after I am finished with this last one."

"Okay." Mei Xing nodded.

Normally, she would insist on staying behind until he leaves too, but she was nervous around Feng Tianwei, and working today was especially tiring even though she worked less than usual.

Once Mei Xing left, Su Yang proceeded to give Feng Tianwei a passionate massage.

At the end of the massage, Feng Tianwei was twitching all over the place like a fish out of water.

"Y-You went easy on me last time?" Feng Tianwei realized this fact afterward and was in shock.

"I wouldn't call it 'going easy'." Su Yang chuckled.

"Anyways, do you think my abilities justify the price I am asking for?" He suddenly asked her.

Feng Tianwei didn't immediately respond and pondered for a minute before speaking, "As much as I hate to admit it, I would definitely pay 100 medium-grade spirit stones for a massage even if it's only for 10 minutes. In fact... I might even be willing to pay more."

"Thank you for your honesty." Su Yang said to her as he wore his clothes.

"Why don't you just move to the Red Light District at this point? That would be the best choice for you and your business as your prices are already reaching our level, and there are plenty of customers who will be able to afford your prices."

"If you stay here in the Pink Light District, where it's mostly for mortals, you won't receive many customers."

Su Yang smiled and said, "Thank you for your advice, but my goal isn't to make as much money as possible."

"Then what is your goal?" Feng Tianwei asked him with narrowed eyes.

"That's a secret."

"Whatever. Keep it a secret then. I don't really care anyway." Feng Tianwei sneered.

And then she continued, "If you go out of business one day and need a job, you can come work for me as my personal masseur. I will make sure to pay you generously."

Su Yang chuckled, "Thank you. I will keep that in mind."

Feng Tianwei left the massage parlor shortly after, and Su Yang closed the store for the day.

"Welcome back, Manager." Mei Xing greeted him.

"Manager... I heard about the situation from Mei Xing. Is everything really going to be okay?" Mei Ying asked him.

"Yes, everything will be fine. The business will slow down for a bit, but that's exactly what I wanted. Furthermore, our waitlist will last us for another 3 months since everyone's time got shortened by half."

"It's going to be a little chaotic for the next few days, and there will be many angry customers, so allow me to apologize for the inconvenience in advance." Su Yang said to them.

"Please... You don't need to apologize to us. It's our job to deal with the customers." Mei Ying said.

"That's right, Manager! I will be satisfied as long as I am working for you. Even if you decide to cut our income, I won't complain." Mei Xing said.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, I won't lower your pay even if we go bankrupt, as that was part of our agreement."

Sometime later, the hotel workers brought dinner to their room.

"Are you not going to eat, Manager? I have never seen you eat before." Mei Xing asked him.

"I don't need food to survive at my current cultivation," he said.

"Even if that's true, you should still eat once in a while."

"Alright, I will eat with you tomorrow."

"Okay!"

Once they finished eating and they washed their bodies, Mei Ying brushed Mei Xing's hair for a few minutes before they went to sleep.

The following morning, Su Yang and Mei Ying left the hotel to go to work.

However, they stopped in front of the massage parlor and didn't go instead.

"This is horrible... Why would someone do this?" Mei Ying covered her mouth in shock as she looked at the building that was vandalized quite badly.

The walls were damaged, looking like someone had slashed it with a sword, and there was foul-smelling trash littered in front of the building.

The door to the building was also destroyed, and if one looked inside from the outside, one would see that the inside had also been vandalized.

"Interesting..." Su Yang mumbled to himself in a low voice when he saw the mess, his gaze as tranquil as a calm lake.

Chapter 978: Vandalized(2)

"Hehe... Serves him right..."

Su Yang could hear the other business owners laughing to themselves, but they didn't give him the impression that they were the culprit.

"Excuse me, fellow Daoists, do you have any idea what happened here?" Su Yang decided to act like a good neighbor and asked them in a calm voice.

"Huh? We didn't see anything."

They quickly shook their heads.

Obviously, they were lying. After all, the City of Pleasure never sleeps, so there was simply no way that someone could've made such a mess and got away with it without any witnesses.

It was obvious to Su Yang that these people knew who did it, but they weren't going to tell him because they didn't like his business that grew too large too quickly, invoking their jealousy.

Of course, Su Yang didn't care if they told him or not.

"What should we do now? We cannot open the business in this condition." Mei Ying said to him.

"Don't worry, I can clean up most of it."

Su Yang then waved his sleeves, summoning his alchemy flames and using them to burn away all of the trash without damaging the property.

This greatly surprised everyone there, as this was Su Yang's first display of alchemy skills.

"You're an Alchemy Master as well?" Mei Ying looked at him with awe in her eyes.

"Well, I did study some alchemy as a hobby," he said with a smile.

"Why didn't you become an Alchemy Master instead?" Mei Ying couldn't help but ask him.

"I like this job better," he chuckled in a mischievous manner.

It took a couple of minutes, but Su Yang eventually cleaned out all of the trash using his alchemy flames.

However, the foul smell still lingered, and the walls and door were still damaged.

Although there was nothing he could do about the damaged walls for now, he had a method to deal with the smell.

"Follow me inside." Su Yang said to Mei Ying, who followed him inside.

Mei Ying immediately started choking from the intensive smell that was much worse inside due to the enclosed space.

Once they were inside, Su Yang retrieved some ingredients and concocted a pill on the spot.

Mei Ying could suddenly smell a sweet fragrance within the air, causing her to look at the pill in Su Yang's hands.

"Manager, what's that?"

"An aroma bomb of sorts," he responded in a calm manner before crushing the pill and scattering the pill all over the place like he was scattering one's ashes.

He then waved his sleeves, creating a small gust of wind that quickly swept through the building and outside, immediately removing the foul smell.

"Wow, it smells so good. I have never smelt anything this pleasant before." Mei Ying, who was just choking from the foul smell, began taking deep breathes with a relaxed look on her face.

The sweet fragrance didn't just stop inside the building and quickly spread outside to the streets, causing the pedestrians to raise their eyebrows as they wondered what was creating this wonderful smell.

"What about the building?" Mei Ying asked him a moment later.

Although the trash and foul smell were gone, their building was still damaged.

Su Yang shrugged and said, "As long as this building doesn't collapse, we can still accept customers."

"I understand."...

Mei Ying sat behind the reception desk once they opened the business, but since there was no longer a door for their building, Mei Ying could watch people passing by their store while glancing at the inside with interest and curiosity.

"What happened here?" One of their customers asked as she waited for the current customer to be finished.

"Well... We got vandalized by somebody," Mei Ying sighed.

"Why would someone do such a thing...? Even if they aren't happy with the changes, to stoop so low..."

"We don't know who did it. It could've been a customer, or it could've been someone else entirely. We also don't know their motives."

"Is that so..."

The customer then said, "Why don't you try asking the city for help? They can investigate for you."

"I will let the Manager know. Thank you." Mei Ying said to her.

The day continued with every other customer that entered their building asking the same questions.

By the end of the day, Mei Ying had lost track of the number of times she had to tell her customers about the vandalization.

"Good work today," Su Yang said to her after he finished satisfying his last customer for the day.

"You too." Mei Ying nodded.

"How about a massage?" He then asked her.

Of course, Mei Ying didn't refuse and followed him to the massage room.

An hour later, they returned to the hotel.

"Welcome back, Mother, Manager." Mei Xing said to them, completely unaware of the incident today.

"Mei Xing, there's something you should know..." Mei Ying approached her with a solemn expression.

"Did something happen?" Mei Xing could tell that something unfortunate had happened based on the atmosphere.

Mei Ying nodded and proceeded to explain to her about the vandalized store.

"What! How could someone be so shameless! Manager, you should definitely report this to the city and have it investigated!"

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I won't find the culprit if I start an investigation."

"Then what are you going to do?"

"Nothing," he said with a calm smile on his face.

"Eh? How could you do nothing? How will that help?" Mei Xing raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"Just wait and watch. The culprit will definitely try to vandalize the building again when they see that we had ignored their hard work."

"And when they try to vandalize the store again, you'll be there to catch them, right?!" Mei Xing added.

Su Yang nodded.

"But Manager, how are you going to capture them if you're here?" Mei Xing then asked a logical question.

"I have already set up a trap. I don't need to do anything myself," he shrugged.

"I see... I cannot wait to see the culprit captured!" Mei Xing nodded.

Chapter 979: Ignoring Their Efforts

The following morning, Su Yang and Mei Xing prepared for work.

"Manager, are you sure you don't want me to be there today just in case something happens?" Mei Ying asked him.

"It'll be fine." Su Yang nodded.

Sometime later, they arrived at the massage parlor.

"Wow, the damage is worst than I'd expected." Mei Xing said as she looked at the damaged walls and broken door.

"Trust me, it was much worse yesterday with the trash and foul smell." Su Yang chuckled.

"How can you laugh at your own business getting destroyed, Manager? I would be very angry and upset if I were you," Mei Xing sighed, unable to comprehend his thoughts.

"Also, it looks like they didn't return to trash the place again, which is a relief."

"I'm sure they'll return. In fact, I really hope they do," Su Yang said in a calm voice.

They entered the building shortly after.

"Since the door is broken, robbers can easily enter this place and steal everything, right? Do you have a solution for that, Manager?" Mei Xing asked him as she stood on the chair behind the reception desk.

"Robbers? They can rob this place all they want. There's nothing of value here— if there's even anything at all."

Mei Xing looked around and sure enough, there wasn't anything for the robbers to take.

There was no furniture besides the chair behind the reception desk, and the money and everything else in the drawers are taken before they leave.

The massage room was even more empty, as Su Yang carries everything inside his storage ring.

Unless the robbers needed a desk or a chair, there was no point robbing this place.

"Also, you will probably be asked about the incident for the entire day. You can just tell them that we'd been vandalized." Su Yang said to her before entering the massage room.

Their first customer entered the store a few minutes later, and just as Su Yang had said, the customer asked Mei Xing about the condition of the store.

"Yes, we'd been vandalized by some very bad people." Mei Xing said.

And she continued, "But you don't have to worry, because we will find the culprits and make them pay for their actions!"

"I hope you catch the culprits as well."

The day quickly passed.

"Ahhhh... I am so tired— more tired than usual." Mei Xing slumped on the chair in an exhausted manner.

She didn't think it would cost so much energy to answer the same question repeatedly; it was an experience she will never forget.

"I really hope this doesn't continue for too long," she sighed.

The two of them returned to the hotel shortly after.

The following day, it was Mei Ying's turn to work with Su Yang....

"Still nothing, huh?" Su Yang mumbled when he noticed no changes to the place.

"You sound like you actually want the place to be vandalized again..." Mei Ying looked at him with a bittersweet smile on her face.

"Of course. How else am I going to catch the culprits?"

"If you catch the culprits, what are you going to do to them?" Mei Ying asked out of curiosity.

"I will kill all of them, obviously," he responded in a cold voice, taking her by surprise.

Seeing Mei Ying's startled expression, Su Yang burst out laughing and said, "I am obviously joking."

"I am a scholar— at least I consider myself as a scholar somewhat. Scholars don't kill people... At least I don't think they do."

"Even if you kill them... it's a common thing within the cultivation world, right?" Mei Ying suddenly asked.

"Yes, that's right. Some people will kill another because they were looked at funny; it's a cold-hearted world where only the strong survives."

"And where weak people must rely on the strong to survive... just like me..."

Su Yang looked at her for a moment before speaking, "Everyone starts out as weak. It's what you do that truly defines your value as an individual. There are some incredibly weak yet influential and powerful people out there. After all, strength isn't the only power in existence."

Sometime later, they entered the building and began another day of work.

At the end of the day, they returned to the hotel without any incidents.

They continued this for a couple more days.

Meanwhile, somewhere within the City of Pleasure, a group of individuals sat before a round table while drinking booze as they chatted.

"It's been a week, but that massage parlor has been operating normally, almost like they aren't even going to acknowledge our efforts." One of these individuals said.

"Bastards! Even though we went through so much effort into trashing that place! I heard he'd managed to clean it up within minutes!"

"We should go back there and trash it again! This time, we should destroy the place so thoroughly that there won't even be a place for them to work at!"

"I agree! Let's burn that trash to the ground!"

Thus, this group of individuals waited until it was way past midnight to approach the Heavenly Massage just like last time, but they weren't there to trash the place today. No, they were going to destroy it—burn the entire building down so that Su Yang could not pretend like everything was okay.

The business owners noticed the group of individuals and could immediately recognize them as the culprits from last time, and they wondered if they were going to trash the Heavenly Massage again.

Of course, they all hoped for this to happen, so they didn't even bother to intervene and watched as this group of individuals began pouring some sort of liquid substance around the Heavenly Massage that was highly flammable.

When the others saw this, they realized that they were not going to trash the place but destroy it entirely!

Despite that, nobody on the street bothered them, much less intervene.

Meanwhile, inside a certain hotel, Su Yang, who had been cultivating silently suddenly opened his eyes, and a cold smile appeared on his face.

"At last, you've finally decided to show up..."

Chapter 980: Why He Failed to Become a Scholar

After spending a few minutes pouring their flammable liquid all around the massage parlor owned by Su Yang, the group of individuals stepped back and prepared to burn the entire building down.

Meanwhile, the witnesses could only gather outside and watch them in silence. As for the shop owners on that street, they were ecstatic and couldn't wait to see the fire.

"Let's get rid of this place and get out of here!" One of the thugs said.

"Right!" Another person took out a match and prepared to light it up.

However, right as he lit the match up, he suddenly felt a dreadful presence appear behind him, causing him to subconsciously turn around with a sweaty forehead.

"Eh?" The thug raised his eyebrows when he couldn't see anybody standing behind him except the spectators in the distance.

'Am I imagining things?' He wondered inwardly.

"L-Look over there! It's Xiao Yang!"

Someone there suddenly shouted out loud, causing everyone there to turn to look, and to their surprise, an ordinary young man wearing plain white robes could be seen approaching their location with a calm look on his face.

In fact, even his steps were oddly relaxed and steady, which greatly puzzled the spectators.

Who could possibly remain so calm when they are about to witness their own business go down in flames? He was acting like the business that was about to be burned wasn't even his! What kind of store owner was he?!

"S-Stay right there if you don't want me to burn down your building!" The thug holding the lit match quickly spoke to him in a commanding voice, even showing him the match that had a small flame burning on its tip.

Su Yang stopped a few meters away from them and spoke in a calm voice, "I don't recognize any of you. Why are you doing this?"

"We are doing this obviously because you had offended someone!" One of them laughed.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows and said, "Why don't you tell me the one who told you to do this so that I could fix my mistake? We could even negotiate."

Su Yang knew that these thugs had been hired to vandalize his store even without needing to ask them.

The thugs were definitely surprised that Su Yang knew that they'd been hired, and they wondered how he got this knowledge.

'Or maybe he's just guessing it?'

"Hmph! Who said we were hired?" One of them then said.

"Oh? Then you're doing this on your own accord? Tell me, what did I do to offend you? "

"I refuse," one of them quickly responded.

"Is that so... Then allow me to guess..."

Su Yang made a pondering face before speaking, "Are you guys jealous that I am only serving females and not males? Unfortunately, there is nothing I can do about it. If you're not satisfied with the results, you can go ahead and burn down the building."

"F-Fuck you! Who would be envious?!"

"Who said that we wanted a damn massage from you?! I'd rather die than let you touch me!"

The thugs refuted his claims that they were vandalizing his business out of spite and envy....

"I guess we share the same sentiment— because I'd rather die than massage a man's body." Su Yang spoke, even shuddering as he said the line.

Then he continued in a cold voice, "Since you won't tell me why you're destroying my store, there are no longer any reasons to keep you all alive."

"Wha—"

The thugs were dumbfounded by his words, but before they could even respond, Su Yang retrieved an ordinary sword out of thin air and swung it, killing one of the thugs before they realized.

As for who he decided to kill first; it was the thug holding the match, and he'd even extinguished the flame on the match alongside the man's life.

The other thugs didn't even realize what had just occurred until their companion's head fell onto the ground, making a weird noise.

"Y-You bastard!"

The other four immediately retrieved their weapons once they realized what had happened, but that didn't matter, as Su Yang easily killed another one with a casual swing of his sword.

All of the thugs were cultivators, but they were only at the early levels of the Sovereign Spirit Realm.

They were simply no match for Su Yang even if he didn't use all of his strength.

And before they were aware, Su Yang had cut down their number by more than half.

However, Su Yang stopped killing them once there were only two left, and he looked at them with a calm look on his face, "The first one to tell me about your client gets to live."

"B-Bullshit! You'll just kill us afterward!" One of them said.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "I am a scholar. I wouldn't do such a dishonorable thing as going back on my own words."

Hearing his words, one of them quickly said, "I-I will tell you! I will tell you everything! Please, just spare me!"

The other thug turned to look at his companion of many years with a look of disbelief on his face.

"H-How dare you betray—"

However, before the thug could even finish his sentence, Su Yang casually flicked his wrist, killing the thug in an instant.

The crowd was shocked by Su Yang's brutal execution in public.

Although the thugs were wrong for their actions, did he really have to execute them in such a manner? And right outside his own business building, no less?

They are beginning to understand why he failed to become a scholar. Perhaps the reason he failed was not because of his lack of knowledge, but his unbecoming character.

The people there feel like they were understanding Su Yang more after witnessing his actions today, and they no longer dared to underestimate him!

After killing the thug, Su Yang stored the sword back into his storage ring before turning to look at the last thug alive.

"If you don't start talking, I will reconsider keeping you alive," he said.

"R-Right away!" The thug quickly said.

Chapter 981: The True Culprit

The last thug to remain alive kowtowed before Su Yang as he spoke about his client, "The person who hired us to vandalize your business is a man named Qian Fujū— he's the owner of a brothel in the Yellow Light District. He came to us out of the blue one day and offered us a thousand middle-grade spirit stones to vandalize your store. That's all I know about him, I swear!"

"Qian Fujū? Yellow Light District? How did I end up offending this person? I don't even know where the Yellow Light District is located, nor have I ever stepped foot inside that place. Are you sure you're telling me the truth?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows, as he wasn't familiar with this name even in the slightest.

"I have no idea. We were only hired to vandalize your store. He didn't tell us anything more than his name." The thug responded in a desperate voice.

Su Yang narrowed his eyes at the thug, and he could tell that the thug wasn't lying.

"I have told you everything I know! You'll let me go now, right?!" The thug said to him.

Su Yang remained silent.

The thug shuddered at his cold stare, and he continued, "Y-Y-You promised that you will spare me if I tell you about our client! Or are you going to go back on your own words before so many witnesses after everything you've said?! Nobody will ever believe you again if you kill me!"

Hearing his words, Su Yang smiled and said, "Calm down, will you? I haven't even said anything and you're already making your own conclusions."

"I will let you go for now, but that doesn't mean you're free to go just yet."

"W-What do you mean by that?" The thug said with a frown.

"I promised to let you live if you told me about your client. While it's true that you did tell me about this Qian Fujū, how do I know that you're actually telling the truth? For all I know, you could have given me some random name."

"I-I swear it's real! His name is truly Qian Fujū! We investigated him after we received this job to make sure he wasn't trying to do us dirty! He's a pretty famous individual within the Yellow Light District who works at the Grand Mountain Brothel!"

"Whether it's true or not... I will figure it out myself when I visit him later." Su Yang said.

"You can leave for now. If I find out that you'd lied to me, I will find you and make you regret lying to me— even if you decide to run away from the City of Pleasure."

"I-I understand!"

The thug quickly stood up and ran away with a dark spot between his legs.

Su Yang then turned around and walked away.

However, before he could go very far, someone there asked him, "W-What about your business? It's still soaked in flammable liquid."

Su Yang glanced at the person and said, "If it burns down, I can simply move to another building. You can destroy my building, but you will not be able to destroy my business."

The business owners there were stumped by his profound words, and they even repeated it to themselves in a mumbling voice.

"You can destroy my building but you won't destroy my business? What a good sentence!"

Sometime later, Su Yang returned to the hotel, and to his surprise, both Mei Xing and Mei Ying were awake....

"Manager... Is everything okay?" Mei Ying asked him.

"Yes, everything is fine. I just had to get rid of a few annoying bugs snooping around the store."

"So the culprits who vandalized the store has returned! What happened to them?" Mei Xing asked him.

After a moment of silence, he said, "They tried to burn down the entire store, so I killed most of them."

Su Yang expected Mei Xing to express shock and disgust, but to his surprise, she said, "Good! They deserve it!"

"Are you okay? Did you get hurt?" Mei Ying asked him in a worried voice.

"No, I am fine."

He then asked, "They also told me that someone had hired them to vandalize the store, but I don't recognize this name. Do you know of someone named Qian Fujū?"

Mei Ying's eyes widened with shock when she heard this name, and her body even subconsciously began trembling with fear.

Su Yang immediately realized her abnormal reaction to this name and said, "You know this person?"

Although she was hesitant at first, Mei Ying nodded slowly, her eyes flickering with despair.

Su Yang didn't ask her anything else, as he could already guess that they had some sort of history— an uncomfortable one at that.

However, after a moment of silence, Mei Ying spoke in a low voice, "I-I think it would be for the best if I stop associating myself with you, Manager. Please don't misunderstand my intentions. There is nothing wrong with you, but if I stay with you, I will only bring you more trouble."

"But before I leave, can you do me one last favor? Can you take Mei Xing from my hands?"

"W-What are you talking about, mother?! You can't leave us!" Mei Xing was shocked by her mother's words.

Su Yang silently stared at Mei Ying for a moment before speaking, "So the reason I am being targeted by this Qian Fujū is because of you, huh? At least the situation makes more sense now."

"Tell me more about it. If you don't want to tell me, I can go ask Qian Fujū instead."

"!!!"

Mei Ying's eyes widened when she heard his words, and she quickly responded, "You cannot! Qian Fujū is a dangerous man! If you offend him anymore, he'll do more than destroy your business! He'll kill you!"

"Kill me?" Su Yang couldn't help but chuckle at her words, and he continued in a calm voice, "Even the Heavenly Emperor cannot kill me. What can a nobody in the City of Pleasure do to me?"

Chapter 982: Qian Fujū

Under Su Yang's intensive and confident gaze, Mei Ying eventually gave up and said, "Alright, I will tell you about Qian Fujū."

She then turned to look at Mei Xing and continued, "Please give us some privacy. I don't want you to hear this."

"I understand." Mei Xing didn't complain and went straight into another room.

Once they were alone, Mei Ying took a deep breath before looking at Su Yang and speaking in a shaky voice, "Qian Fujū... He used to be one of my most frequent clients. He would come to visit me at least every day— sometimes even many times throughout one day at first. I don't want to sound arrogant saying that he was obsessed with me, but..."

"He was a little rough at first, but it wasn't anything new. However, he eventually started hitting me, and it would worsen as time went on."

"I tried to do something about it, but alas, he was a business owner within the Yellow Light District while I was only a lowly escort in the Pink Light District. Even if he killed me, nobody would help me or do anything to him."

"Even worst, he threatened to take Mei Xing away from me if I resisted against him, so I could only let him abuse me. Fortunately, he would stop coming over as often, so I only had to deal with him once a week, sometimes even a month. This lasted for many years until you freed me from that place, but by the looks of it... It appears that he wants me back..."

"I see... So he's the reason you acquired those wounds..." Su Yang mumbled in a low but calm voice.

However, deep within his heart burned a small but vicious flame. As someone who treated every single one of his partners as though they were his treasures, he despise those who treat them badly, especially those who stoop so low to hit their partners.

"I understand. You don't have to say anymore." Su Yang said to her, who was clearly trying her best to not shed any tears as she recalled her unpleasant memories with Qian Fujū.

"Go get some rest." Su Yang said a moment later.

"You won't do anything unreasonable while I sleep, right?" Mei Ying asked him in a worried voice.

"Haha... What do you think I am going to do? Waltz straight to the Yellow Light District and kill Qian Fuju? You're thinking too much. How about this? I will sleep together with you on the same bed tonight so you can tell if I slip out of the bed later?" Su Yang suggested.

Although he would've definitely done just that— kill Qian Fuju, he was not there as 'Su Yang', so he can not do something so daring without repercussions.

"Sleep on the same bed...?" Mei Ying was taken by surprise by his suggestion, but she didn't refuse.

"Okay."

Sometime later, Mei Xing returned to the room, and they all slept in the same bed.

'Wow... I am sharing the same bed with the Manager and mother... He feels even more like a father now!' Mei Xing thought to herself as she held a huge smile on her face for the rest of the night even when she was asleep.

The following morning, Su Yang and Mei Xing left the hotel and walked to the massage parlor side to side.

"What is this smell? It smells so weird, and my nose feels like it's being pricked by tiny needles every time I take a breath." Mei Xing immediately pinched her nose when she smelled this awful smell.

However, the smell wasn't foul— it was just unpleasant and very intense.

"It's a flammable liquid. I didn't bother to clean it up yesterday." Su Yang said as he summoned his alchemy flames, shocking Mei Xing.

"If it's flammable, why are you using that?!" She exclaimed with a terrified look on her face.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry."

He then tossed his alchemy flames at his own building, immediately engulfing the entire building with fierce flame....

This shocked not only Mei Xing but the people around him, and they all wondered why he was trying to burn down his own building after what happened yesterday.

Whoosh!

The alchemy flames disappeared shortly after, and to everyone's surprise, the building remained completely unharmed.

"T-The smell is gone!" Mei Xing grew even more surprised when she realized this fact.

"Let's go inside." Su Yang spoke calmly as he approached the door.

"O-Okay!" Mei Xing quickly followed him from behind.

Once they were inside the building, business began as usual.

Their clients would ask Su Yang if everything was okay, as they'd heard about what happened yesterday from others.

"News sure travels fast in the City of Pleasure. I am fine, thank you for the concern." Su Yang chuckled.

"Good, because I'd be devastated if your business is suddenly gone." The woman said as she removed her clothes and laid on the bed.

Time passed quickly, and before they were aware, it was already the end of the day.

"Let's go home." Su Yang said to Mei Xing.

"Okay!"

They left the building shortly after.

However, they were forced to stop the second they stepped outside the building, as a group of individuals suddenly surrounded the building and blocked their path.

"Manager..."

Mei Xing immediately walked behind Su Yang for cover.

"How may I help you, gentlemen?" Su Yang asked them with a calm expression on his face.

The group of people didn't respond to his question.

A moment later, the people in the center moved out of the way to allow a handsome young man to enter the surrounded area.

The handsome young man stopped walking a few meters in front of Su Yang, and he proceeded to stare at them with a look of arrogance in his gaze.

"You're the one who stole my woman from me? I expected something more pleasant to look at, but alas, you turned out to be some toad." The handsome young man spoke in a calm voice, yet his tone was filled with disgust.

Su Yang could immediately recognize this man's identity even though this is his first time seeing this person.

"Qian Fujū, huh? You just saved me time looking for you." Su Yang said with a calm smile on his face.

Chapter 983: Red-Robed Madam

"Looking for me? You? Ahahaha!" Qian Fujū began laughing after hearing Su Yang's words.

"Well, here I am. What are you going to do to me now that you've found me? Kill me like you killed those thugs?"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I would love to if you willingly stick your neck out for me, but even then, I am a scholar. I don't hurt people unless I am given a reason to."

"Hmph! How dare a mere massage boy speak to the Young Master in such a tone?! Are you looking to die right now?!" One of the people there exclaimed in an arrogant voice.

"Calm down. Why are you lowering yourself for a mere 'massage boy'?"

To everyone's surprise, Qian Fujū was the one who stopped his follower.

Qian Fujū returned his focus on Su Yang, and he continued, "You must think you're some hotshot because your business is doing somewhat decent. You must be very proud of your skills as a masseur. However, you're a nobody who got lucky in the Pink Light District, one of the poorest areas in the City of Pleasure. In the Yellow Light District, people like you are a dime a dozen, much less the Red Light District."

"What are you trying to imply?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"That your business can disappear and nobody would give a damn. You said that one could destroy your store but not your business, right? Let's put that to the test."

Qian Fujū then looked around and said to the spectators, "Starting right now, whoever dares to visit this massage parlor will have to deal with me, Qian Fujū of the Yellow Light District!"

The spectators exchanged glances with each other. They didn't think Qian Fujū would stoop to this level. However, it wasn't uncommon within the City of Pleasure. That's why everybody minds their own business and tries their best to not offend people from the more prominent districts, as they have the ability to do something like this without any consequences.

"Y-You can't do that! We'll tell the authorities on you!" Mei Xing used all of her courage to say this sentence to Qian Fujū.

"Authorities? Hahahaha! Do you even know who I am? I am the authority! Who will dare to do anything to me for messing with some nobody in the Pink Light District?" Qian Fujū burst out laughing.

Once he had enough, Qian Fujū said, "I have had enough. I don't want to stay in this dump any longer or the dirty air will affect my health. But before I go, allow me to repeat— whoever dares to visit this massage parlor starting today will have fun with me, Qian Fujū!"

He then turned around and began walking away, and his minions followed.

"He's done. There's no way anybody would dare to visit his business now without offending Qian Fujū."

"Is Qian Fujū that powerful? He's only in the Yellow Light District, right? Not to underestimate him or anything, but they're ranked 3rd of all districts in City of Pleasure with Red Light District being first and the Cyan Light District being second."

"It's not Qian Fujū himself that people are afraid of— it's his background. Do you know who his mother is? She's known as the Red-robed Madam within the Red Light District."

"What?! Red-robed Madam is Qian Fujū's mother?! That changes everything!"

Su Yang overheard the crowds' not-so-low voices.

'Red-robed Madam?' Su Yang raised his eyebrows upon hearing this nickname....

'She's still working here? And she even got a son?'

For the first time, Su Yang actually recognized a name within the City of Pleasure.

One would expect Su Yang to be at a loss now that he realizes Qian Fujū was the son of someone he knew— and she was even a woman. However, that was further from the truth.

In fact, ever since he heard her name that was related to Qian Fujū, his desire to kill Qian Fujū grew even further.

Thousands of years ago when Su Yang arrived at the City of Pleasure to do business, he met Red-robed Madam, who was a somewhat famous courtesan, and she would try to seduce him.

However, he refused because he was there strictly for business, and he felt that he should avoid her for some reason, so he did.

And to his surprise, a few weeks after he left the City of Pleasure, Red-robed Madam tried to ruin his reputation by claiming that he had assaulted her and even beat her while he did so as revenge for not sleeping with her.

Fortunately for Su Yang, his reputation had already reached an unshakable level, so nobody really believed Red-robed Madam with some people even calling her out.

If it were not for the fact that he was busy with something else at that time, he would've returned to the City of Pleasure to kill Red-robed Madam for trying to smear his name, and by the time he was done with his business, he'd already forgotten about the incident since she was an insignificant ant back then.

"Let's go home." Su Yang said to Mei Xing.

"Okay..." She nodded.

However, when she tried to move, her legs turned into tofu, causing her to fall.

"Here." Su Yang squatted to let her climb on his back.

Mei Xing gladly accepted his carry and securely wrapped her arms around his neck.

They left the place shortly after, returning to the hotel, where they explained the situation to Mei Ying.

"To be honest with you, I'd expected worse from him..." Mei Ying released a deep sigh after listening to their story.

"But I am glad that he didn't harm either of you."

"What will happen to the store now, Manager?" Mei Xing asked him.

Su Yang pondered for a moment before speaking, "I will continue to manage it, but it might be a little too dangerous for you two, so I will manage the store alone for a while. Don't worry, I will still pay your salary even if you're not working. Consider it as a vacation of sorts."

Chapter 984: Thugs Guarding the Entrance

"Manager... I don't care about the salary... I just don't want to see you hurt, or even worse— dead..." Mei Xing said to him in a sighing voice.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, they can't hurt me even if they try."

The mother and daughter pair looked at each other in silence, silently wondering to themselves where he was getting his confidence from.

"Go rest. I know you're tired." Su Yang said to them before retiring inside his own room.

There was nothing Mei Ying or Mei Xing could do, so they went to sleep as advised.

The following morning, Mei Xing said to Su Yang right before he headed out, "Manager, are you sure you want to work alone? I don't mind even if it's dangerous. I won't be able to cultivate properly if I am constantly worrying about you."

Su Yang smiled at her words and said, "Have some confidence in me, won't you? When have I ever lied? If I say that I will be fine then I will be fine."

Although Mei Xing was still somewhat reluctant to leave him alone, she eventually gave up and accepted the situation.

After leaving the hotel, Su Yang made his way to the massage parlor, where two bulky men stood on beside the door to his building, seemingly guarding the place.

These two men were clearly Qian Fujū's lackeys, and they were obviously there to make sure that nobody will enter the building.

Despite seeing this, Su Yang approached the building with a calm look on his face.

The two men turned to look at him with disdain on their faces, but they didn't intervene even when Su Yang stood directly before them.

"You know, my business will suffer if I have to ugly men standing outside the building." Su Yang said to them.

The men glanced at him for a moment before ignoring him.

Su Yang shrugged and entered the building.

The pedestrians were shocked by Su Yang's boldness, and they wondered if his balls were made of steel.

How does one have the guts to do business in such a situation?

"I'm not going to lie... I didn't expect him to show up today..." One of the business owners there said to another.

"Right? If I were in his shoes, I'd have packed and left the city before sunrise."

"What does he think he can even achieve in this kind of situation? Unless he deals with Qian Fujū, nobody will dare enter his store."

"Maybe he has someone powerful backing him, hence his confidence. Did you already forget that Madam Feng from the Red Light District had advertised for him? She even personally visited his store before!"

"You're right! If it's Madam Feng, she might be able to do something about this situation!"

Meanwhile, Su Yang sat inside the massage room and proceeded to cultivate normally, not even bothering to think about the situation.

A few minutes later, one of Su Yang's unaware clients approached the massage parlor only to be stopped by the two bulky men outside.

"Halt! Qian Fujū has announced that whoever dares to enter this massage parlor will face his wrath!"...

"What? Why is Qian Fujū doing this?" The woman frowned.

"That isn't any of your concerns! Just know that the moment you enter this massage parlor is the moment you make Qian Fujū your enemy!"

The woman's frown grew deeper.

Although it'd be a great loss for her to miss this chance to experience Su Yang's renowned massage techniques, and she even waited very long for this chance, she didn't want to offend Qian Fujū, who was notorious for being a vicious person that will do anything to get rid of his enemies.

If someone offends Qian Fujū, they will essentially have to stay away from the City of Pleasure until he leaves, or they will face endless troubles.

After pondering for a moment, the woman decided that it wasn't worth offending Qian Fujū for a mere massage, so she reluctantly left.

"Good choice!" The bulky men laughed out loud, clearly loving their job.

This scene would repeat many more times throughout the day.

However, not everyone was willing to lower their head for Qian Fujū, especially those who didn't even know Qian Fujū.

After all, even though Qian Fujū was famous within the City of Pleasure, it wasn't like everybody in the Four Divine Heavens knew him.

"Qian Fujū? I don't know him! Even if I do, I don't care! I waited so long for this massage, even delaying some of my plans for it, and I am not going to miss it!" The pretty woman stood before the bulky men with a brave look on her face.

"You bitch! Don't say we didn't warn you!"

"Hmph! What are you going to do? Hit me? You don't even know my identity, so how are you going to deal with me? Get out of my way!" The woman bravely marched inside the massage parlor, shocking the spectators.

The bulky men were slightly flushed after encountering this woman, but they didn't actually do anything to stop her.

After all, their job was only to warn people to not enter Su Yang's business. Even if Qian Fujū is very influential within the City of Pleasure, there were boundaries that even he cannot cross, and one of them is unreasonably assaulting people.

After entering the building, the woman knocked on the door to the massage room, "Manager, are you here?"

"Yes, I am. You can come inside." Su Yang's voice resounded the next moment.

The woman entered the room and asked him, "Are you okay, Manager Xiao?"

"Yes, I am fine."

"What happened? Why are there thugs standing outside your building and threatening people?"

"It's a long story." Su Yang said with a bittersweet smile on his face.

"Anyways, allow me to compensate you for this inconvenience."

The woman's eyes flickered with delight, and she quickly began removing her clothes.

A few moments later, they began cultivating, and because of the situation, Su Yang decided to cultivate with the woman until the next customer arrives or when the current customer could no longer continue, which was greatly welcomed by the customer.

Chapter 985: I Won't Treat You Badly

About two hours into Su Yang's cultivation session with his client, a figure approached the massage parlor with confident and elegant steps.

The thugs standing by the door prepared to turn her away, but when they saw her face, their mouths immediately froze, and they didn't dare to speak any longer.

"What are you looking at? Are you going to threaten me if I go inside?" Feng Tianwei said to the thugs in a sneering voice.

"W-We don't dare." They quickly responded with stiff smiles on their faces.

Even with Qian Fujun backing them, neither of them dared to offend someone from the Red Light District.

"Hmph." Feng Tianwei coldly snorted before entering the massage parlor.

Seeing the closed door, she thought to herself, 'Does he actually have a client in this kind of situation?'

Feeling a little surprised, Feng Tianwei went back outside and asked the thugs, "Hey, did someone else go inside before me?"

"Y-Yes... She went inside two hours ago and hasn't come out."

"Is that so?" Feng Tianwei didn't say anything else and went back inside the building.

Of course, Su Yang was aware that he had a new visitor, so he ended the session shortly afterward, not that his client could last any longer, anyway.

A few minutes later, the door opened, and a beautiful woman with a completely flushed face staggered outside.

Feng Tianwei glanced at this woman, silently thinking to herself that Su Yang definitely treated her greatly.

Once the woman left the building, Feng Tianwei entered the massage room to find Su Yang tidying his clothes.

"I'm surprised that you still have customers," she said to him in a calm voice.

"And I am grateful to them for it," he responded in a similar calm voice.

"Anyways, why are you here? Do you want a massage, too? Since the schedule's all messed up, I can accept you now."

"You seem awfully calm despite your situation. What are you going to do now? Your business definitely won't survive at this rate, especially since Qian Fujū will only make it harder for customers to come to this place."

"I will somehow manage," he said.

After a moment of silence, Feng Tianwei said with a smile on her face, "You're definitely just acting tough and are actually fearful on the inside. If you become my personal servant, I will help you get out of this hole."

And she added, "Don't worry, I won't treat you badly."

Su Yang chuckled and said, "That doesn't sound too bad, but sorry, I don't need your help."

"Listen here, I am probably the only person in the City of Pleasure who can help you right now. Qian Fujū's mother is the Red-robed Madam, and she's just as crazy as her son. If you do anything to Qian Fujū, she will definitely come flying at you."

"However, I know Red-robed Madam quite well, and if I speak with her, she will definitely control her son so that he doesn't bother you."

Su Yang pondered for a moment before asking, "How influential is Red-robed Madam right now?"

"Huh?" Feng Tianwei didn't understand his question at first despite the seemingly simple question.

"Compared to you, how influential is she in the City of Pleasure right now?" Su Yang asked again.

"Well, she's definitely more influential than me, but not by too much. As for the whole City of Pleasure... She's probably top ten right now." Feng Tianwei said.

'Top ten, huh? She's definitely gained some more popularity since we last met...' Su Yang thought to himself....

A few thousand years ago, Red-robed Madam was only somewhat popular, probably around the top 100 within the City of Pleasure.

Of course, this also meant that it'll be much more difficult to deal with Red-robed Madam in his current state.

'Perhaps it's about time I become a little serious with this business.' Su Yang sighed.

"So you don't want my help?" Feng Tianwei narrowed her eyes at him.

"If it requires me to be your servant, then no, I don't," he calmly replied.

"Hmph! Then I wish you the best of luck because you will need it! And when it's too late, I cannot wait to see you on your knees begging me for help!"

After saying such words, Feng Tianwei turned around and walked outside.

Su Yang merely shook his head, and he proceeded to cultivate while he waited for more clients.

At the end of the day, Su Yang left the massage parlor, but he didn't go back to the hotel.

Instead, he went to the management hall where he opened the business.

He then looked around until he found the old man that helped him open the store and approached him.

"Hey." Su Yang called out to him.

"Hm? You are..." The old man quickly recognized his ordinary face.

"How may I help you, young man?"

"I'd like to change locations for my business." Su Yang said to him before taking out a couple of flawless-grade spirit stones and placing them on the table.

The first thing the old man did when he saw the spirit stone was grabbing them like a monkey stealing food before putting them in his pocket.

He then looked at Su Yang with a bright smile on his face, "Where would you like to move your business?"

"The Red Light District." Su Yang said without hesitation.

The old man didn't ask any questions and took out a map of the city.

He then looked around and said, "There are only a few available buildings in the Red Light District, but none of them are small like your preferences."

"That's fine. I will take whatever's available."

"Then here are the layouts for the available buildings. Once you find a suitable place, let me know and I will immediately transfer your business there." The old man said.

Su Yang nodded and began looking at the scrolls one by one.

He then asked, "Which of these have the most massage parlors around?"

"That would be this one." The old man pointed to one of the buildings.

"Then I will take this one," said Su Yang, taking the old man by surprise.

After all, it would make more sense if he took his business to where there are fewer massage parlors around, as that would mean less competition, so why did he pick the place with the most competition?

Chapter 986: Are You Going to Kill Us?

"Then how about this building? There are 4 other massage parlors nearby, and they are all quite popular within the Red Light District." The old man pointed to a certain building that had two floors and nine rooms.

"That's good enough. I will take this one." Su Yang nodded.

"Great. Then give me a few minutes to get your paperwork ready."

The old man proceeded to go in the back of the room for many minutes. Since this building was located within the Red Light District, it took more effort to get things ready.

About ten minutes later, the old man returned with the proper paperwork and handed them to Su Yang, alongside the keys to the building.

"If you need anything else, just let me know!" The old man said with a bright smile on his face.

"Well, I do have something to say."

"What is it?"

"The old building is a little destroyed due to some thugs if you don't mind." Su Yang told him about the damages done to the massage parlor.

"Oh? How bad are the damages?"

Su Yang then explained to him, "The walls are all scratched up, and the outside door is completely gone."

"Heavens... Who did it? I will have them responsible for the mess!" The old man said with a frown.

"Don't worry, I already took care of them."

"If you say so. As for the damages, as long as the building is still there, we can fix it up, so don't worry about it."

Normally, the store owner would have to pay for the damages done to their building, but with how much money Su Yang already gave him, the old man didn't dare to be too greedy, so he didn't hold Su Yang accountable.

Su Yang returned to the hotel shortly after and was immediately greeted by Mei Xing jumping at him.

"Manager! Where have you been this whole time?! I have been worried sick that something might have happened to you!" Mei Xing said to him in a nearly crying voice, as Su Yang had returned later than usual.

She was so worried that she nearly left the hotel to check up on him if it were not for Mei Ying, who stopped her from doing so.

"Sorry, but I had some business after work today, so I took a little detour," he said as he patted her small head to calm her.

Once she was calm, Su Yang looked at Mei Ying and said, "We're moving."

"Huh? What do you mean?" Mei Ying raised her eyebrows in a questioning manner.

"I changed locations for our store— to the Red Light District," he said with a smile on his face.

"What?!"

Both Mei Ying and Mei Xing exclaimed in a shocked voice, but it was not because they changed location. It was their new location, the Red Light District.

"How did you manage to move to the Red Light District from the Pink Light District? That usually doesn't happen since only influential people are allowed to work in the Red Light District!" Mei Ying said.

"I guess you can say that I am a little influential... With my money." Su Yang chuckled.

The Mei couple was speechless upon hearing his words.

"You bribed them, Manager?" Mei Xing asked him with a surprised face.

"What? Of course not. I am a scholar. I wouldn't do such a thing. I merely paid him for his service. That's all." Su Yang said in a calm voice....

"What's going to happen to the old building?" Mei Ying then asked.

"Well, it's no longer our problem." Su Yang shrugged.

"What about this hotel? The Red Light District is at least 3 hours away from the Pink Light District..." Mei Ying then asked.

"We'll live in the new building since there are multiple rooms available," he said.

"Even though you spent so much money renting this place out?"

"It wasn't much. Don't worry about it."

Mei Ying and Mei Xing looked at each other in silence.

"Go get some rest. Things might grow a little hectic tomorrow," Su Yang suddenly said to them with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Hectic? What's going to happen tomorrow?" Mei Xing asked.

"You'll see."

Su Yang didn't say anything else and retired inside his room shortly after, leaving the two full of questions.

However, there wasn't anything they could do besides wait for tomorrow, so they went to sleep.

The following morning, Su Yang checked out of the hotel with Mei Ying and Mei Xing by his side.

"Are you sure, esteemed guest? You still have a year left in this place, and if you check out now, you won't receive your money back." The receptionist said to Su Yang.

"Yes, I am sure."

"If you don't mind me asking, did we do something wrong? If there's anything we can do to..."

"Don't worry, there's nothing wrong with the hotel. We're moving out because we'll be working in another location, and it's too far from this place."

"I see. That's a relief." The receptionist said, and she continued, "If you ever decide to come back and the room hasn't been occupied by another guest yet, you may use the room without paying extra."

"Okay. Thank you."

Su Yang handed the keys to the receptionist before leaving the hotel.

"Let's stop by the massage parlor for a bit." Su Yang said to them.

"A-Are you sure?" Mei Xing asked him in a nervous voice.

"I am sure. As long as I am there, nobody will hurt you."

Sometime later, they arrived at the massage parlor, and just as expected, there were two thugs standing outside and guarding the door.

Su Yang acted as though they weren't even there and walked up to the building before retrieving his sword.

The thugs were startled for a second when Su Yang suddenly took out his weapon.

"W-What do you think you're doing?! Are you going to kill us? Go ahead! The second you injure us, Qian Fuju will go after your head!" The thugs laughed after they snapped out of their daze.

Chapter 987: Relocating

"Go ahead! Kill us if you dare!"

The thugs willingly showed their necks for Su Yang, provoking him to kill them.

The pedestrians there watched with interest, wondering to themselves whether Su Yang will kill them or not.

"Manager..."

Both Mei Xing and Mei Ying looked at him with a worried expression.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Why would I waste my time killing you idiots?"

He then swung his sword so fast that nobody there could even see where the sword went, writing a few words onto the wall of the building.

The thugs sweated profusely after realizing that Su Yang had already swung his sword, as they didn't even see his movements.

They were told that Su Yang was a scholar, yet he was showing skills that resembled a swordmaster instead!

Everybody there looked at what Su Yang wrote on the wall—

'Relocating to the Red Light District'

"What?!"

Everyone there were shocked by the words 'Red Light District'.

"Impossible! How could he possibly move his business to the Red Light District?!" The store owners were in disbelief.

As far as they were aware, only extremely popular stores that have been in the City of Pleasure for many years could possibly own a store in the Red Light District.

However, Su Yang had only been there for a few weeks! How did he manage to relocate to the Red Light District? Who did he bribe?!

Unbeknownst to these people, it had only cost Su Yang a couple of flawless-grade spirit stones to move to the Red Light District.

Of course, while 10 flawless-grade spirit stones may seem like a little, one must consider the average income in the City of Pleasure.

A single high-grade spirit stone was already worth a fortune, much less a flawless-grade spirit stone.

And if anyone had so much money to spend, they would already be working in the Red Light District, hence why it was incredibly rare for store owners to bribe their way into the Red Light District.

"Let's go." Su Yang said to Mei Ying and Mei Xing before turning around and walking towards the Red Light District.

Meanwhile, the others there watched their backs until they disappeared from the scene.

"W-We need to let the Young Master know about this!" The thugs snapped out of their daze and quickly left the place shortly after to relay the news.

"What? He moved to the Red Light District? Impossible! He's bluffing!" Qian Fujun, who was in the middle of cultivating with two women at once stopped whatever he was doing and turned to look at the closed door.

His followers had just told him the news from outside, which shocked him greatly.

There were two reasons why Qian Fujun was upset about this news....

One, Su Yang had managed to move to the Red Light District before him, who has been trying to move to the Red Light District for years now without any success.

Even though his mother is the highly successful Red-robed Madam in the Red Light District, his mother purposefully made it so that he wouldn't be able to move up the ranks easily using her fame, hence why he has been stuck in his district for so long.

The second reason why he was upset was simply because he wouldn't be able to mess with Su Yang's business since the Red Light District has much stricter rules than the others districts.

Even if his mother is the Red-robed Madam, he would suffer severe consequences if he causes trouble inside the Red Light District without any good reason. Moreover, his district was inferior to the Red Light District, so that made things even more difficult for him.

"Fuck! How did that bastard manage to enter the Red Light District?!"

Qian Fuju was no longer in the mood to cultivate, so he kicked the two women out of his room while they were still naked.

"Investigate this!" Qian Fuju then ordered his lackeys to see whether it was true or not.

Meanwhile, Su Yang and the others just entered the Red Light District.

"Wow... This place is so much cleaner... so much nicer than the Pink Light District..." Mei Xing was in a daze as they walked in the Red Light District, as it was her first time stepping inside this district.

In fact, it was a first for both the mother and the daughter.

"Manager, what about Qian Fuju? Even if we relocate, can't he just follow us and continues causing trouble? I think we should still report him." Mei Xing said to him.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "The Red Light District is different from the Pink Light District. There are actually rules in this place, so Qian Fuju will no longer be able to mess with us— at least so openly."

"He will definitely try to do something, but it won't be as obvious since he could get in trouble if he's caught."

"Really? That's great news!" Mei Ying said in a cheerful manner.

Su Yang nodded, and he said, "Let's stop by the storage before we check out our new building."

The source of this content is freewebnovel.com

"The storage? What's that?" Mei Xing asked.

"It's a place in the Red Light District where you can store almost anything, and they will keep it safe for you until you decide to retrieve it," he said.

About an hour later, they arrived before a massive building that was also heavily guarded with powerful cultivators surrounding the building.

"There's a place like that in the City of Pleasure? I never knew that." Mei Ying said as she stared at the scene in awe.

Su Yang ignored the guards and walked straight inside the building without any problems.

Once they were inside, they walked to the receptionist, and Su Yang said to the woman working there, "I'd like to retrieve something."

"Most certainly. What are the storage number and the password for it?" The receptionist asked him in return.

She also handed him a piece of paper and something to write on it.

Su Yang began writing something on the paper before handing it back to her.

"Thank you. Please give me a few minutes to verify this information." The receptionist said to him before disappearing from the scene.

Chapter 988: Key to Success

"Manager, what are you trying to retrieve?" Mei Xing asked him while they waited.

"The key to our success," he said with a mysterious smile on his face.

"I don't understand," she said.

"You will understand it in the near future."

A few minutes later, the receptionist returned with a small metal box in her hands.

"I have verified the information. Here is your item." The receptionist handed the box to him without asking any more questions, as that was how the place worked.

Anyone could enter this place and store anything for a fee depending on how long they intend on storing it, and anyone could retrieve the item as long as they had the storage number and the password to it.

This made things convenient for the customers and the workers alike.

Of course, this place isn't unique to the City of Pleasure, as there are many storage areas like this across the Four Divine Heavens.

Once he verified the thing inside the box is what he expected, Su Yang walked out of the building with a gentle smile on his face.

'I never thought I would need this thing...' He couldn't help but smile after recalling how he thought that he would never use this item when he first received it, as it was something that would only be useful inside the City of Pleasure.

Both Mei Xing and Mei Ying's anticipation grew when they noticed Su Yang's expression, and they began wondering to themselves what could possibly be inside the metal box.

About another hour later, they finally arrived at their new building for their business.

"Wow, there are two floors to this building? And it's so big compared to our last building!" Mei Xing was deeply impressed by their new building.

Just the reception area alone was larger than their entire building before. Furthermore, there was furniture already prepared for them inside the building.

The three of them proceeded to explore the new building together.

Besides the reception area, there were 4 other rooms on the first floor, and each of them was many times larger than the massage room in their old building.

Moreover, there were beds in every single one of these rooms, almost like they were in a hotel instead of a massage parlor.

The second floor was the same as the first floor including the reception area that was right in front of the staircase.

"Manager, there are so many rooms— too many, in fact." Mei Xing said to him afterward.

"Do you intend on hiring new workers? If not... Then this place is truly overboard for three people." Mei Ying said.

"This is actually the second smallest building out of my choices." Su Yang said.

"And I don't intend on hiring more workers. I am satisfied with just the two of you."

"As for these rooms, we don't really need to use them."

"But that's such a waste..." Mei Xing said.

Then she had an idea.

"Oh! Manager! I have a suggestion! We can rent out the unused rooms like a hotel! This place can be a hotel and a massage parlor at once!" She said.

"That's not a bad idea. I personally don't care about the rooms, but if that's what you want, we can do that. However, I won't be hiring more people to manage the rooms."...

Mei Ying nodded and said, "That's perfectly fine, Manager. One of us can manage the reception while the other manages the rooms."

"I want to be the receptionist!" Mei Xing quickly said.

Mei Ying nodded.

"As for your rooms, you can use any rooms you like." Su Yang then said.

Sometime later, Su Yang retrieved his metal box and opened it.

Both Mei Ying and Mei Xing looked at the item inside the metal box, but they were more puzzled than surprised after seeing it.

"What's that? It looks like a medallion of sorts. How is that the key to success? It's not even a key." Mei Xing said.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "It's the Medallion of Pleasure."

"Medallion of Pleasure? This is my first time hearing such a name," she said.

Mei Ying also showed a questioning expression.

"Really? Neither of you knows about the Medallion of Pleasure? I thought it is supposed to be a very recognizable treasure in the City of Pleasure, and I was told that everyone in the City of Pleasure would be able to recognize it at glance."

Mei Ying shook her head and said, "I'm not really sure, but our knowledge isn't that good despite living here for pretty much all of our lives so maybe that's why we don't know about it."

"Manager, are you sure you didn't get tricked? Who sold you this medallion?" Mei Xing asked him.

"I didn't buy it. It was given to me after I helped someone, and that person wouldn't lie to me." Su Yang said.

"Then what is it suppose to do?"

Su Yang didn't answer her question and instead said, "Why don't we see for ourselves?"

He then walked outside and hung the medallion in front of his building where it could be seen by nearly everyone in the street, just like he was advised in the past.

However, nobody really took notice of the medallion since they all ignored what Su Yang was doing.

"It's doing nothing. I think you really got tricked, Manager." Mei Xing said to him when nothing happened even many minutes later.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Let's give it some time before we jump to any conclusions."

Mei Xing nodded, and they went back inside the store.

Shortly after they went inside the building, one of the pedestrians there noticed the medallion hanging outside the building and immediately stopped walking to stare at it with wide eyes.

"I-I-It's a Medallion of Pleasure?! When did a store with a Medallion of Pleasure open up in this place?!" The pedestrian exclaimed in a shocked voice, altering the others in that area.

"What? Did someone say the Medallion of Pleasure? How is that possible?"

"Are you sure you're not seeing things? There's no store with a Medallion of Pleasure on this street."

"L-Look for yourselves! I'm sure that's the Medallion of Pleasure!"

The pedestrian pointed at the medallion hanging outside Su Yang's store, and sure enough, when the others saw it, their eyes widened with shock, looking like they just witnessed a ghost.

Chapter 989: Real or Fake

"It really is the Medallion of Pleasure! But where did this come from? It wasn't here yesterday!"

The pedestrians gathered outside Su Yang's building to take a closer look at the medallion hanging outside.

"How do we know if it's real? This is too sudden."

"Why don't you take a closer look at it?"

"You want me to touch it? What if it's real? Are you crazy?"

The people there weren't sure whether the medallion was real or not, but they were all too scared to touch it for some reason, acting like it was taboo.

Eventually, even the store owners in that area left their store to take a look at the medallion.

"Who owns this store now? It has been vacant for several years now." One of them asked.

"I think I saw a young couple and a child go inside not long ago."

"So they just arrived? And they already have a Medallion of Pleasure? How is that possible?"

"What kind of business are they operating? I don't see any signs."

"Does someone want to get an official to verify the medallion?"

"I already called one! He will be here in a few minutes."

Thus, everybody there began waiting for the official without moving from their spot, almost as though they had to find out whether the medallion was real or fake no matter what.

In the meantime, they would continue to talk about the Medallion of Pleasure as though it held great importance.

A few minutes later, an old man could be seen running in their direction.

"Where is the reported Medallion of Pleasure?!" The old man asked the people there, and they immediately pointed at the medallion hanging outside Su Yang's store.

"W-Wait... This building is..."

The old man recognized this building, as he was the one who gave this building to Su Yang just yesterday night!

'He had a Medallion of Pleasure this entire time?!' The old man cried inwardly.

If he had such an item, why did he resort to bribing for a spot in the Red Light District, much less the Pink Light District? He could've easily opened a store anywhere in the city even without bribing!

"Old Ping, is this Medallion of Pleasure real or fake?"

Someone there suddenly asked, snapping the old man out of his daze.

"Right. Does anyone here have a ladder? I want to take a closer look at it."

"I have one! Give me a moment!"

A few minutes later, the old man was given a ladder, and he placed it right beside the medallion before climbing it to inspect the medallion without actually touching it.

The people there held their breaths as the old man inspected the medallion, and they nearly died from lack of air after waiting for many minutes....

After a few minutes, Old Ping climbed down the ladder and looked at the massive crowd there with a solemn look on his face.

He then spoke in a low voice, but everyone there was able to hear it as clear as day, "It's real."

As though the ground shook, many people there staggered a little upon hearing the results.

"It's real? Heavens..."

The place turned dead silent for a good moment.

"Old Ping, do you know what kind of business is being done here?"

He nodded and said, "If my memories serve me correctly, it's a massage parlor."

"What? A massage parlor of all things? This is the first time a massage parlor has managed to acquire a Medallion of Pleasure..."

"What about the owner of this store? Who is it?"

"It's a young man named Xiao Yang. That's all I know about him."

"Do you know how he'd acquired the Medallion of Pleasure?"

"I wouldn't be this surprised if I knew..."

Unfortunately for them, the store was closed at this moment, so they didn't have any reason to enter the building.

Meanwhile, inside the building, Mei Xing and Mei Ying were completely oblivious to the crowd outside their building since they were trying to decide which room they should stay inside.

Although all of the rooms were almost identical to each other, the mother and daughter pair still took their time to pick a room.

As for Su Yang, he decided to stay in the same room as them, as he didn't care which room he slept in, and that would give them an extra room for hotel services.

Eventually, they decided to live on the first floor inside the room that was closest to the reception desk, as that would make things more convenient for them.

"Manager, what is going to happen to our clients from before? We don't know who will show up and who won't, so it will make accepting new clients complicated." Mei Xing asked him sometime later.

After all, they had a whole list of clients that had scheduled in advance, and it was not like they could act as though the list never existed. However, they won't be able to accept new clients until they finish the list, as they'd have to put them in the back of the list that would take months to finish.

"It's actually quite simple. I will continue to serve those on the list as scheduled, but if someone doesn't show up and we have a new customer, the new customer can take the absent one's place."

"What if all of the old customers show up?" Mei Xing then asked.

"Then I will serve them first and serve the new customers after hours. In other words, I will be working overtime until the list is finished."

"But what if new customers continue to arrive? Won't we need to continue the waitlist?"

"No, I will no longer continue the waitlist. If someone wants a massage but we don't have a slot on that day, they will have to return another day."

"I see... So a first-come-first-serve basis just like the priority system? That makes sense. Hopefully, we will have many customers like before." Mei Xing sighed.

Chapter 990: Medallion of Pleasure

After Old Ping verified that the Medallion of Pleasure in front of Su Yang's building was real, news spread within the Red Light District like wildfire.

"Did you hear?! There's a new business with the Medallion of Pleasure!"

"What?! Since when? How come I haven't heard of this!"

"That's because it was discovered today! Apparently, it's a new business, too!"

"A new business with the Medallion of Pleasure? That doesn't make any sense. The medallion isn't something that can be acquired by a new business. In fact, the last time someone acquired one was over 10,000 years ago."

"I don't know what to tell you. Go check out the place if you want. It's in the Red Light District, but the store is closed now."

"If this information is true, then this place will be the 21st business in the City of Pleasure to have a Medallion of Pleasure since the city's creation!"

Although 21 Medallion of Pleasures may seem like a lot, one must keep in mind that the City of Pleasure has existed for millions of years, and for there to be only 21 medallions in existence, they can be considered quite rare.

As for what the Medallion of Pleasure signifies— they are the most prestigious honor that one can obtain within the City of Pleasure, and only those that have been approved by the lord of the city can be rewarded with such a thing.

There have been many lords for the City of Pleasure throughout the years, and they have the ability to hand out a Medallion of Pleasure. However, they are only allowed to give out one Medallion of Pleasure in their life.

With that being said, there have been hundreds if not thousands of people that have taken the position of 'lord' for the City of Pleasure throughout the years, but not every lord has the ability to give out a Medallion of Pleasure.

The system is a little complicated, but only the most monumental lords with the most accomplishments within the City of Pleasure are allowed to give out a medallion, hence why they are so rare and taken so seriously.

As of this moment, including Su Yang's massage parlor, there are only 3 stores in the entire City of Pleasure with a Medallion of Pleasure, hence the peoples' excitement when they learned that there was a new business with the Medallion of Pleasure.

Furthermore, when a business has the Medallion of Pleasure, one can expect guaranteed satisfaction from these businesses, which will definitely attract countless customers.

Of course, Su Yang knew about the Medallion of Pleasure, hence why he called it their 'key to success', but it has been tens of thousands of years since he obtained the medallion, so he wasn't sure if it was still as revered.

As for why neither Mei Ying nor Mei Xing knew about the Medallion of Pleasure— it was simply because the Medallion of Pleasure was too grand for the people of Pink Light District, so nobody really mentions it.

In fact, most people in the outer areas of the city that aren't business owners are not aware of the medallion's existence.

"Manager, when will we open up the store again?" Mei Xing asked him right before bedtime.

"We can open up tomorrow if you're ready," he said.

"I am ready!" She quickly responded.

"I never thought that I would be able to work in the famous Red Light District... I cannot wait for tomorrow to come!" Mei Xing said as she entered the bed and went under the blanket, sleeping beside Mei Ying.

"I also would've never imagined that I would be working in the Red Light District. Thank you for giving us this opportunity, Manager." Mei Ying said with a smile on her face....

Su Yang silently nodded with a smile on his face as well.

A few minutes later, the mother and daughter fell asleep while Su Yang cultivated for the rest of the night.

The following morning, Mei Xing and Mei Ying woke up and began prepared themselves for work.

"Manager, how much should we charge for the rooms?" Mei Xing asked Su Yang when she realized that they didn't have a price prepared for their second business.

"One high-grade spirit stones for a day," he calmly replied.

And he continued, "We will also change the price for my massage. They will now cost 1 high-grade spirit stone for a 10-minute session, but the price will remain the same for those that are on the waitlist."

"One high-grade spirit stone?!" Mei Xing was left speechless by his response.

How can they charge such an astronomical price for a single day, much less a 10-minute massage session?

"Don't forget that this is the Red Light District. If you make your services too cheap, it will actually harm your business since they will think that your services are as cheap as its prices, not to mention the Medallion of Pleasure..."

"I guess that makes sense..." Mei Xing mumbled to herself after hearing his reasoning.

"Speaking of the Medallion of Pleasure, how do we know if it's working?" Mei Ying suddenly asked.

Su Yang showed a mysterious smile on his face and said, "Why don't you go outside and see for yourself?"

"Eh?"

Neither Mei Ying nor Mei Xing was aware of the massive crowd outside their building, so they were in for a big surprise.

And sure enough, when they opened the door to go outside, they were greeted by a massive crowd that surrounded their building, making it impossible for them to even go anywhere.

This greatly startled the two of them, especially since the crowd all snapped their heads to look at them the moment they opened the door.

"Ah!"

Mei Ying even screamed out loud before falling on the floor on her buttocks when she saw the crowd outside.

"W-What is going on? Are we under attack?" Mei Xing mumbled in a dazed voice.

Su Yang appeared a moment later, and he said with a slight smile, "I think they are customers."

"C-Customers? This many?" Mei Xing stared at them with her eyes wide as saucers, clearly in disbelief.

Chapter 991: Medallion of Pleasure (2)

"Hello, how may I help all of you?" Su Yang asked the crowd with a friendly smile on his face.

However, they didn't immediately respond to him, as they were dumbfounded by his young and ordinary appearance.

While there are rumors of Su Yang being a young man, nobody really believed it, but now that they are seeing him in person, they have no choice but to believe it.

"A-Are you the owner of this place?" One of them finally asked him.

"That's right. My name is Xiao Yang, and this is my store," he confirmed.

"What kind of business do you do here?"

"This is mostly a massage parlor, but we are also a hotel, and I only offer my massage services to female customers," he said.

The crowd was amazed to learn that a massage parlor had managed to receive the Medallion of Pleasure since it has never happened before.

"If you don't mind me asking, who did you acquire your Medallion of Pleasure from? Oh, I am the owner of the store right across from yours."

Su Yang smiled and said, "It was entrusted to me by a friend."

"That makes a lot of sense..." The crowd there began mumbling to each other.

Once the lord of the city hands someone a Medallion of Pleasure, they are not allowed to take it back, but the person who received the medallion is allowed to hand over the medallion to another person, and it has been done many times throughout the years.

However, most of them have either been destroyed in incidents or their owners lost them, hence why there is only three Medallion of Pleasure left in the City of Pleasure as of this moment.

Furthermore, if the current owner of the medallion isn't up to standard with their services or business, they can have their medallion revoked by the city, which will be destroyed afterward.

The people in the city also didn't mind that the medallion could be passed on as long as the services provided by the medallion holder is qualified to hold the medallion.

Of course, this meant that one could also steal the medallion from another, but that has never happened before simply because they will be offending the entire City of Pleasure by doing so, and the medallion is useless outside the city, so it made no sense for someone to steal it unless they are working in the city.

"Then do you know which Lord gave out the medallion?" Another person there asked him.

Su Yang shook his head, "Unfortunately, I do not."

Obviously, he knew who gave the medallion, since he is the original owner, but it would make people question his identity if they knew the Lord, especially since the Lord can only give out one medallion in their lifetime.

If they learn the name of the Lord, they will also learn that the Lord had given her medallion to the infamous Su Yang, and that would let the people know that he has a connection with Su Yang, something he wanted to avoid....

Fortunately, the people didn't really seem to mind, as they only cared about the significance of the medallion, not who handed it out.

"When do you open? I'd like to experience your massage service and see if you're qualified to hold the medallion." One of the women there suddenly asked him.

"We will be opening shortly. However, before anything, you should all know a little about my business since I have actually been working in the Pink Light District for a little before coming here." Su Yang said to them.

"What? The Pink Light District?"

They raised their eyebrows. How could someone with the Medallion of Pleasure work in the lowly Pink Light District?

But they didn't say anything and allowed Su Yang to explain first.

Thus, Su Yang began telling them about their waitlist, why he'd decided to relocate to the Red Light District, and how he will be handling his new customers so that they wouldn't be puzzled.

"I wanted to work my way up without using the Medallion of Pleasure at first, but because of that incident, I was forced to relocate to this place and use the Medallion of Pleasure." Su Yang sighed out loud after explaining everything to them, acting like a pitiful victim.

"Qian Fujū? Isn't that Red-robed Madam's son who's currently working in the Yellow Light District? I already knew that he was trouble, but to think he would offend someone with a Medallion of Pleasure... What an idiot."

While nobody in the Pink Light District dared to even look at Qian Fujū in the eyes, the people at Red Light District couldn't care less about Qian Fujū and even dared to talk badly about him in public since he was beneath them.

"If you don't mind the temporary inconveniences, you are more than welcomed in my store. Thank you all for listening, and I will see you soon." Su Yang said to them before going back inside the building and closing the door.

He then turned to look at Mei Xing and Mei Ying, who was still dazed by the whole situation.

Su Yang chuckled and started explaining to them the significance of the Medallion of Pleasure.

"Amazing... And you got such a priceless treasure from a friend? What a generous friend." Mei Xing said.

Su Yang didn't respond to such words and merely nodded with a smile on his face.

As for how he actually acquired the Medallion of Pleasure, it was many thousand years ago when he traveled to this city to treat the lord at that time, who was seriously ill from having too much Yin Qi in her body because nobody was able to satisfy her.

And being Su Yang, he took it upon himself to treat the Lord, satisfying her until her body was exhausted of Yin Qi for the first time in forever.

After that, the Lord gave him the Medallion of Pleasure in case he ever decides to open up a business in the city.

Chapter 992: Why Am I So Unlucky?

"Boss! We have a problem! A huge problem!"

One of Qian Fujū's lackeys rushed into his room with a panicked face.

"What happened?" Qian Fujū asked with a frown on his face.

"It's that massage parlor you're trying to destroy! Not only are they really working in the Red Light District now, but there is something even more shocking! They actually have a Medallion of Pleasure!"

"WHAT?!" Qian Fujū stood up so hard that he nearly pulled a muscle in his legs.

"Repeat that!" He demanded.

Despite his nervousness, the lackey repeated his words.

"They have a Medallion of Pleasure... And pretty much the entire Red Light District is now aware that you had messed with the owner. Things are going to get rough for us."

"Impossible! How can they possibly have a Medallion of Pleasure?! If they had one, why didn't they say anything when I tried to ruin their business?!" Qian Fujū was in complete disbelief.

Not even in his wildest dreams would he have imagined that someone within the Pink Light District would have the Medallion of Pleasure.

Due to the prestige of the medallion, if someone were to mess with the owner or its business, they were basically offending the entire City of Pleasure.

"Are you sure this information is correct?!" Qian Fujū asked his lackey again, seemingly unwilling to believe this information.

"It's true, Boss! They even had an official verify the medallion! If you don't believe me, you can go see for yourself! However, it would be risky to leave this place now..."

"Shit! Fuck! Damn it all! Why am I so unlucky?!" Qian Fujū kicked and tossed his furniture around.

Not only did he lose his favorite woman to another man, but he might even lose his business now that he's offended someone with the Medallion of Pleasure!

After destroying his room, Qian Fujū sat down and began pondering about a solution.

However, before he could think very far, someone kicked his door down before entering his room.

"Who dares—"

Qian Fujū screamed as he turned to look at the door, but his voice forcibly halted when he saw the individual walking at him in an angry manner.

"Fujū! What is the meaning of this?!" A beautiful woman wearing a revealing red robe shouted at him.

"M-Mother! What are you doing here?" Qian Fujū immediately stood up and looked at his mother, the Red-robed Madam, with a terrified expression.

"I am here because the entire district is talking about you! They are saying that you'd caused trouble for the owner of a Medallion of Pleasure! Is this true?!"

"M-Mother! L-Let me explain!" Qian Fujū immediately explained the situation to her.

"I didn't know he had a Medallion of Pleasure! And he was working in the Pink Light District before moving to the Red Light District! There was simply no way that I could have known that he would have such a thing!"

"You useless thing! Do you have any idea what you've done?! Ignorance won't save your ass since this is the Medallion of Pleasure we are talking about! If that owner goes to the current lord of the city and complains, you won't be the only one to be punished! Even I could be affected!"

"I am sorry..." Qian Fujū said to her with his head lowered from shame....

However, his mother wasn't impressed by his apology, and it even worsened her mood.

"Sorry?! As if an apology will do anything! If you're going to apologize, do it to the right person! Go apologize to that person and plead for his forgiveness!"

"Y-You want me to beg him to forgive me? Impossible! I'd rather die than lower my head to him!"

"Then you can die!"

His mother immediately retrieved a sword from her storage ring and pointed it at her own son without any hesitation.

"Either you personally apologize to him, or I will kill you right here and use your corpse to apologize!"

In her eyes, no matter how much she loved her son, she wasn't willing to risk her own business and livelihood that took her thousands of years of effort to build.

"F-Fine! I get it! I will go and apologize to him!" Qian Fujū quickly had a change of heart after seeing his mother's serious expression as she pointed her sword at him.

Red-robed Madam retrieved her sword and said in a cold voice, "The quicker you apologize to him the better. In fact, I will give you until tomorrow. If it's not done by then, I will apologize to him instead— with your head."

Qian Fujū swallowed nervously before nodding in a stiff manner.

His mother left the scene shortly after.

Qian Fujū collapsed on the floor afterward, and he would sit there for the rest of the day with a blank expression on his face.

Meanwhile, Su Yang opened his business after Mei Ying and Mei Xing were prepared.

Immediately, people began flooding the first floor.

"W-Welcome to Heavenly Massage! How may I help you today?" Mei Xing greeted the guests with a somewhat nervous smile on her small face.

"I would like a massage," said the person first in line.

"Are you on the waitlist? If not, you'll have to wait five minutes to see if that person will show up for her appointment. If she doesn't show up, you can take her place, but if she does show up, you will have to wait until later."

"I understand." The woman nodded.

Five minutes passed quickly, but the person who was on the waitlist didn't show up, so Mei Xing gave the spot to the new guest.

Once inside the massage room, Su Yang greeted the beauty with a friendly smile on his face.

"Do I have to remove my clothes?" The woman asked him.

"That is entirely up to you," he said.

The woman pondered for a moment before deciding to remove her clothes.

Su Yang then led her to the bed that had its mattress replaced with his own, and he began massaging the woman.

Chapter 993: Are You Here to Cause Us Trouble Again?

About ten minutes after Su Yang accepted his first client, the door to the massage room opened, and an ordinary young man walked out with a seemingly unconscious woman in his arms being carried to the room on the other side of the hall.

Now that he was working in the Red Light District, Su Yang no longer held back as much when it came to his techniques since the standard for him and his business had skyrocketed due to the Medallion of Pleasure.

Of course, this didn't mean that he would be going all-out, as that would instantly give him away as Su Yang.

If one had to gauge how much effort he was putting into the massages, it would be around 40 percent out of 100 percent, and that much was more than enough to dominate the entire City of Pleasure where everyone has above-average endurance.

After putting the unconscious woman that had passed out from experiencing too much pleasure inside one of the available rooms so that she could rest properly, Su Yang returned to the massage room to wait for his next client.

A few minutes later, another woman entered the massage room to experience his massage techniques.

'Heavens... It feels like it's been forever since we've had this many customers...' Mei Xing said to herself as she greeted one customer after another.

"I would like to rent a room for a day." A 'couple' stood before Mei Xing.

"Okay, that would be 1 high-grade spirit stone." Mei Xing said to them, feeling a little nervous afterward since she has never asked for so much money before.

"Here you go."

And to Mei Xing's surprise, the client handed her a high-grade spirit stone in a very casual manner.

'Wow! The Red Light District is truly another beast! Everyone here is so rich that they can spend so much money without thinking twice!' Mei Xing accepted the high-grade spirit stone with excitement.

Meanwhile, Mei Ying worked as a room service, cleaning the rooms after a customer leaves.

Although most people pay for a day's worth of room, they would check out early after finishing their 'business' inside.

Of course, this meant that their hotel was being used as a temporary brothel where people go to have fun with their partner that they picked up from the street, but that is very common in the City of Pleasure, so it wasn't anything unexpected.

The day continued with the massage parlor receiving great business.

At the end of the day, Su Yang accepted his last customer.

Meanwhile, somewhere in the Yellow Light District, Qian Fujū left his room and made his way to the Heavenly Massage.

"B-Boss! Where are you going?!" His lackeys asked him when they noticed him leaving without saying a word.

"I don't think it's a good idea to go outside now, boss," said another lackey.

Qian Fujū shook his head and said, "I have to. Don't bother me."

The lackeys looked at each other. They could tell that Qian Fujū was dispirited just from his voice alone, so they decided to ignore him.

After he left, one of the lackeys said, "The Red-robed Madam visited earlier today, and I am guessing that it has something to do with her."

"I have never seen the boss acting like that before."...

"Probably because he's never offended someone with a Medallion of Pleasure before..."

"What do you think is going to happen now?"

"Only heaven knows."

Once Qian Fujū left his building, he began making his way to the Heavenly Massage, and just as he'd expected, everybody in the street was giving him weird looks.

"Isn't that Qian Fujū? He dares to show face after offending someone with a Medallion of Pleasure? Is it boldness or stupidity?"

"Hahaha... He's probably going to apologize for his actions!"

"Qian Fujū apologizing? Now that's something that only happens once in a lifetime!"

Qian Fujū's face was flushed red from anger after hearing the people openly mock him. However, he didn't do anything about it and merely started walking even faster.

Eventually, he arrived at the Heavenly Massage.

Even though the place was already closed, there were still people lining up outside the building, most likely for the next day.

Qian Fujū ignored the line and walked straight to the entrance. After taking a deep breath, he knocked on the door.

"We're closed!" Mei Xing's voice resounded the next second.

However, Qian Fujū continued to knock on the door, and he would continue doing so until someone opened the door.

Eventually, Mei Xing went to open the door to see who was being so rude and annoying, and to her absolute shock, Qian Fujū was at the door!

"M-M-Manager! Help!" Mei Xing shouted in a terrified voice that sounded like she was about to be abducted and sold to a brothel.

Su Yang, who was cleaning the massage room but was aware of Qian Fujū's presence didn't panic when he heard Mei Xing's cry, but Mei Ying ran like she would die if she didn't when she heard her daughter's scream.

"Mei Xing! What happened—?!" Mei Ying halted her movement when she saw Qian Fujū's figure standing at their front door, and her body uncontrollably trembled as she recalled her traumatic experience with him.

"W-What are you doing here?! Are you here to cause us trouble again?!" Mei Xing eventually got off the floor and onto her feet, confronting Qian Fujū in a brave yet terrified manner.

Seeing her daughter's action, Mei Ying pounced forward and stood between Qian Fujū and Mei Xing in a protective manner, as she was afraid that Qian Fujū might harm them.

However, to their surprise, Qian Fujū didn't do anything, merely standing there with an uncaring expression on his face.

Su Yang showed up a few moments later, and he calmly approached Qian Fujū until they were only a few steps away from each other.

"Looking to scout out my new store before you make your lackeys guard the front door like previously?" Su Yang asked him in a joking voice.

Chapter 994: Qian Fujū's Apology

When Qian Fujū saw Su Yang appear before him, even cracking a joke like they were buddies, Qian Fujū immediately fell to his knees and kissed the floor with his forehead before speaking in a loud voice, "I apologize for trying to ruin your business, Xiao Yang. Please, forgive me!"

"Eh?"

Both Mei Ying and Mei Xing stared at Qian Fujū with their eyes wide open, especially Mei Ying, who would've never imagined that she would witness Qian Fujū apologizing while kowtowing.

"Oh? You want me to forgive you?" Su Yang asked in a confirming manner.

"Yes, that's right. I have wronged you. Please, forgive me. I am willing to do anything," Qian Fujū confirmed.

"Hmm... What should I do? I am a scholar and a benevolent person, so maybe I should forgive you. After all, not much harm was done to me, anyway." Su Yang said.

Qian Fujū grew hopeful when he heard Su Yang's words, and even his eyes flickered with a hopeful light.

Su Yang then continued, "However, I failed as a scholar, and you have done plenty of harm to other people. Let me ask you this... Did you forgive your victims when they pleaded for mercy? Oh, you don't actually have to answer that since I already know the answer."

"You want me to forgive you? Hahaha!" Su Yang suddenly started laughing.

Qian Fujū's facial expression grew ugly when he heard Su Yang's laughter, and his complexion paled after he listened to Su Yang's next sentence.

"I refuse. I will not only not forgive you, but I will also make it my life's mission to make your life as miserable as possible. Don't worry, I won't do it right now. I want you to savor this feeling of despair."

"If you wish to live a little longer, then you should get the hell out of this city."

"Now that you have my response, you may get away from my store. Your unpleasant presence might affect my business."

"Wait—"

Before Qian Fujū could even respond, Su Yang slammed the door in his face.

"..."

The entire street was silent as they watched Qian Fujū's miserable appearance.

Qian Fujū's body trembled in anger, and he gritted his teeth so hard that his gums began bleeding.

He currently has this uncontrollable desire to destroy the building before him and everyone in it, but he knew that he would die before he could do so, as there were many experts in that place silently watching him from the shadows.

Thus, Qian Fujū could only swallow his anger and go home for now.

What happened today quickly spread throughout the Red Light District as well as the other districts, as Qian Fujū was an infamous person who has harmed a lot of people, mostly those from a lower-ranking district than his.

"Hahaha! Serves that bastard just right!"

"Qian Fujū offended someone with a Medallion of Pleasure? Hahaha! This is the best news I have heard all decade long!"

"Who is this person he offended? Xiao Yang? I have never heard of him before."...

"What's going to happen to Qian Fujū now?"

"Nobody knows."

"Hopefully, he leaves the city and never returns."

People from all around the City of Pleasure began celebrating Qian Fujū's misfortune.

When this news reached Red-robed Madam, she was definitely not happy. However, there wasn't much she could do in this situation.

Her son had offended someone with a Medallion of Pleasure, and he was known for being a troublemaker in the City of Pleasure. Nobody will be on Qian Fujū's side besides his lackeys.

But as much as she wants to leave Qian Fujū alone, he was her son at the end of the day, and he went to apologize as she'd asked of him.

Red-robed Madam then called a few people to gather information on Xiao Yang to see if there was anything she could do.

A few days later, she received all of Xiao Yang's information, but to her surprise, there was none.

"What? There's no information on Xiao Yang before he arrived in the City of Pleasure? How is that even possible? Surely, he must have some sort of background!" Red-robed Madam was shocked to learn that all information on Xiao Yang was virtually nonexistent before his appearance in the City of Pleasure, almost like he was a ghost prior to coming to the city.

"He claimed to be a failed scholar. Did you check with the scholars? They should have his information!"

"There is none, Madam Qian. In fact, that was the first place we checked! There was nobody by the name of Xiao Yang that had taken their scholar examination in the last decade!" The informant said to her.

Red-robed Madam frowned when she heard this.

"Xiao Yang... Just who are you? You have no background outside of the City of Pleasure, and you somehow have a Medallion of Pleasure..."

Red-robed Madam was more intrigued than ever now.

'What are you hiding, Xiao Yang? Whatever it is, you've clearly put in some effort into hiding it! Once I learn your secret, I will have you in my control!'

"Continue searching! I don't believe that he has no traces in this world! Find an information broker if you have to!" Red-robed Madam commanded her informants.

Meanwhile, at the Heavenly Massage, business was as busy as usual.

"Looks like Qian Fujū won't be coming back to bother us any longer." Mei Xing said as she cleaned the reception area after business hours.

"I sure hope so..." Mei Ying sighed.

A few days have passed since Qian Fujū disappeared after pleading Su Yang for forgiveness, and ever since getting rejected, Qian Fujū hasn't reappeared in public since then.

Nobody knows where he went— not even his own lackeys or mother.

People speculated that Qian Fujū had left the City of Pleasure due to fear, but others believed that he was hidden somewhere within the city, quietly plotting revenge against Xiao Yang, who pushed him into this hole that he dug himself.

Chapter 995: Acting Innocent

A week have passed since Qian Fujū's disappearance, and business was as usual within the Heavenly Massage.

In fact, business was so good that Mei Xing and Mei Ying had forgotten about Qian Fujū, allowing them to focus on their work.

Early in the morning on one day, an extremely beautiful woman wearing red robes and red heels approached the Heavenly Massage.

When the pedestrians there saw this red-robed figure, their eyes widened with shock.

"T-That's the Red-robed Madam! What is she doing here?"

"Do you think she's here because of what happened to her son, Qian Fujū?"

"Very likely..."

The pedestrians there mumbled to each other in a mosquito-like voice. Unlike when they cursed Qian Fujū out loud, nobody there dared to speak badly of the Red-robed Madam out loud.

"Do you mind if I cut the line? I have some important business with the manager of this place, Xiao Yang. I will compensate everyone for this inconvenience." The Red-robed Madam asked the people standing in line outside the building.

"G-Go right ahead."

Everyone in the line nodded their head with nervous smiles on their faces.

"Thank you all." The Red-robed Madam no longer bothered with the people there and entered the Heavenly Massage the next moment.

"Welcome to the Heavenly Massage! How may I help you today?" Mei Xing greeted her without knowing her identity as Qian Fujū's mother.

"I'd like to speak with your manager, Xiao Yang."

"The Manager? What is this about?" Mei Xing then asked.

"It's about my son, Qian Fujū." The Red-robed Madam said, not planning on hiding her identity.

"Eh?"

Mei Xing didn't immediately comprehend Red-robed Madam's words, but when she did, her eyes widened with shock.

"Q-Qian Fujū's mother?!" Mei Xing exclaimed.

"P-Please wait a moment!"

Mei Xing immediately got out of her chair and ran into the massage room to explain the situation to Su Yang.

"Manager! Someone claiming to be Qian Fujū's mother is here to speak with you!" She said to him.

"The Red-robed Madam, huh?" A profound smile appeared on Su Yang's face.

He then went outside with Mei Xing following behind him....

"Hello, I am Xiao Yang. You're Red-robed Madam, Qian Fujū's mother, right? Let's go somewhere more private, shall we?"

Red-robed Madam nodded and proceeded to follow Su Yang into one of the hotel rooms while Mei Xing returned to managing the reception.

"I'm sorry, but I don't have any tea to serve you since I didn't expect any visitors in such a manner." Su Yang said to her once they sat down in front of each other on the couch.

"It's fine. I came here unannounced, and I do not plan on staying for too long," she shook her head in a calm manner.

"Then let's immediately continue onto the subject. Why do you want to speak with me?" Su Yang asked her with a calm yet serious expression on his face.

"It's simple. I am here to apologize for my son's actions," she said in a sighing voice.

And she continued before Su Yang could even open his mouth, "Ah, please don't misunderstand my intentions. I am not seeking for your forgiveness, nor am I asking you to spare him. I am merely here as a mother to apologize for her own son's wrongdoings."

Although Su Yang remained nonchalant on the outside, he was actually sneering in disgust inwardly.

'Acting innocent, huh? You might be able to fool others with your appearance as an honest and sincere person, but I know exactly how rotten you are as a person.' Su Yang sneered inwardly.

Red-robed Madam had acted in the same manner when he visited this place before as Su Yang, but as soon as he rejected her approaches, she immediately started plotting to ruin his image, accusing him of kidnapping, assaulting, and torturing her.

If he could, he would kill her at this moment.

However, Su Yang didn't show any of his disgust towards Red-robed Madam on the outside and acted like this was their first meeting.

"I see... You've now put me in a difficult situation. You seem like an honest person, and I don't want to make you sad, but when I recall the horrible things that have done to others, I just cannot bring myself to spare him. I hope you'll understand."

"No, I completely understand. As I'd already said, I didn't come here today to ask for your forgiveness. In fact, I would like to become friends or something similar."

"Friends?" Yuan couldn't help but chuckle after hearing her words, and he said, "Even though I might be the reason your son dies?"

"If that happens, then so be it. That idiot son of mine has always been causing trouble for others no matter how much I warn him. I knew that karma would eventually find its way to him and make him pay for everything one day. I have already long prepared myself for such a situation." Red-robed Madam said.

Her intentions were clear— to make it seem like she doesn't care about Qian Fujun and appear to be on Su Yang's side so that he doesn't go after her business in the future if she cannot save Qian Fujun, perhaps even benefit from him, who has the Medallion of Pleasure.

Unfortunately for her, she had already messed everything up without realizing it, and it was done so many thousand years ago.

"And to start things off, why don't we talk about our background so we get to know each other a little better? I will start first," she said, obviously trying to gather information on his background.

"Oh, I will pay for taking up your time, so you don't need to worry about that," she suddenly added.

Su Yang pondered for a moment before nodding his head with a friendly smile on his face, "Sure. Why not?"

After all, the more he knew about his enemies, the easier it would be for him to deal with them.

Thus, Red-robed Madam began telling Yuan about her past and how she began her business in the City of Pleasure.

Chapter 996: Room Services

"And that's how I came to the City of Pleasure, starting my own business. After thousands of years of sweat and blood, I have finally arrived in my current position." Red-robed Madam ended her story of how she arrived in the City of Pleasure.

"That's really admirable, Madam Qian." Su Yang said to her.

"I'm sure your story will be even more admirable. Why don't you tell me a little about yourself? How did you arrive at the City of Pleasure? What made you open up a business?"

"Well, it's really nothing compared to your story. I am merely a failed scholar who decided to work in the City of Pleasure after hearing so many good things about this place from my buddies." Su Yang said with a smile.

'Again with the scholar background? I have already double-checked that information, and you never even went to take the scholar exam.' Madam Qian sneered inwardly after hearing Su Yang's story, but she made sure to keep calm and not reveal her thoughts.

"A scholar, huh? I think you have what it takes to become one. Why did you fail? And why the City of Pleasure? It's such a sudden and abnormal change in career." Madam Qian asked him.

"Well... To be completely honest with you, it's mostly because of my family. I never had any interaction with other people besides my own family, nor was I given the chance to. This aspired me to become someone who can have a lot of interaction with other people, and what better place than the City of Pleasure that is known for connections and such?"

"As for why I failed to become a scholar... It's simple. I never even took the test. My family wanted me to become a scholar, but I turned around in front of the examination building." Su Yang shrugged.

"Wait... Huh?"

Madam Qian's eyes widened when she heard Su Yang's last sentence.

He'd turned around at the examination building? Is that why there isn't any record of a Xiao Yang? Does this mean it's all a huge coincidence?

However, Madam Qian refused to believe that Xiao Yang had no secrets.

After all, even if he didn't take the scholar examination, there were still many blank spots in his background.

"You mentioned your family... What kind of family is it?" Madam Qian then asked.

If she cannot get any information on his identity, she could do so with his family's background!

Unfortunately, Su Yang had already thought this out, and he said in a clear voice, "Sorry, but I cannot say anything about my family. They really hate it when I mention them, as I am nothing but a failure in their eyes, and they do not want to associate themselves with me."

"If they learn that I'd mentioned being part of their family, they will definitely tear down my business and drag me back home."

Madam Qian was left speechless. How is she supposed to get any information on him like this? At this rate, she will leave this place empty-handed!

"Don't worry, I won't tell anyone. I promise." Madam Qian said with a beautiful smile on her face.

However, Su Yang remained reluctant and said, "I'm sorry, but I do not have the courage. Maybe in the future, when I am more courageous, I will tell you."

"I see... Then you must visit me whenever you feel comfortable telling me." Madam Qian said to him.

After talking for a few more minutes, Madam Qian left the place with an unsatisfied look on her face.

"Is everything okay, Manager?" Mei Xing asked him when he came back outside.

"Yes, everything is fine. You can start sending customers my way now."

Mei Xing nodded, and the day proceeded like usual....

At the end of the day, Su Yang greeted his last customer for the day.

"Hello." Su Yang greeted this tall beauty with a gentle smile on his face.

The beauty stared at him in silence for a good moment before speaking in a sneering voice, "Are you really as good as they say? I don't believe it. Look at your fragile-looking arms. How can you possibly pleasure anybody with them?"

Su Yang continued smiling, and he said, "Whether they are right or wrong... Why don't you find out for yourself?"

"That's exactly why I am here. If you disappoint me, I will..."

The woman didn't finish her sentence and laid on the bed.

"What do you want me to do?" Su Yang asked her.

"I want you to satisfy me, of course. Just so you know, I haven't been satisfied for over 500 years now," she said.

"500 years? How often do you come to this city?" Su Yang asked.

"Who knows..."

"Rest assured. I won't let you leave this place until I completely get rid of your exhaustion." Su Yang rolled up his sleeves and immediately began massaging her stiff body.

"Your body... Do you practice the sword?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"Hm? I do. How can you tell?"

"Your muscles. Those that wield the sword practice in a certain way, so their muscles are often stiff in similar spots," he said.

"Not bad, I suppose."

However, despite her seemingly tough attitude, the woman began moaning very quickly after experiencing Su Yang's hand techniques, and after three minutes, she could no longer resist the temptation to remove her clothes.

"Show me what you're made of." She said with her arms and legs spread wide open in a seductive manner.

Su Yang gladly accepted her request and stripped naked before inserting his stiff rod inside her tight cave, banging the living soul out of this woman.

About fifteen minutes later, the woman walked out of the massage room with staggering movements, looking like she was drunk.

"Good job, Manager." Mei Xing said to him when he returned to their room.

However, shortly after they retired for the day, someone knocked on their door.

Su Yang was greeted by a beautiful young lady with a smile on her face.

"Hello! I am sorry for bothering you, but I was wondering if your hotel provides room services such as massages. The other hotels have this option, but I wasn't sure if this hotel was the same."

Chapter 997: Deal!

"Room services?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

Although they did not provide such services, Su Yang didn't immediately refuse for some reason.

"If I need to pay extra fees... How about 100 high-grade spirit stones?" The young lady suddenly offered.

"100 high-grade spirit stones?!" Mei Xing immediately jumped off the bed and tugged on Su Yang's robes.

"Manager, you should do it! Even if it's just a one-time thing, this is 100 high-grade spirit stones, which is equal to 100 customers!"

Su Yang looked at Mei Xing who was staring back at him with money in her eyes.

"Are you sure you want to pay 100 high-grade spirit stones? There is a no refund policy here." Su Yang asked the young lady.

"Yes, I am sure," she quickly nodded.

"Alright then." Su Yang agreed to her offer, mostly because of Mei Xing, who would surely be sad if he let go of so much money.

"Great! Follow me! I live on the second floor!" The young lady suddenly grabbed his hand and began pulling him upstairs.

Once they were inside the young lady's room, she handed him the spirit stones before sitting on the bed.

"I should've asked you this earlier, but how long do I get for 100 high-grade spirit stones?" She asked him.

Su Yang pondered for a moment before speaking, "For that much money, you'll get as long as you can last."

"So if I can last the whole night..."

"Yes, then I will spend the entire night with you."

"Deal!" The young lady chuckled.

"Give me a moment to change my clothes."

The young lady then removed her clothes before wearing a semi-transparent dress that revealed every inch of her body.

She then laid on the bed and beckoned him with a seductive smile on her face.

Su Yang climbed the bed and immediately began massaging her body.

"Oh~! Not bad! This is definitely worth 100 high-grade spirit stones!" The young lady spoke after experiencing his techniques for a couple of minutes.

"However, that won't be enough to satisfy me."

Hearing her words, Su Yang poured more spiritual energy into his fingertips before pressing them deep inside her soft skin.

"Ah~" The young lady released a gentle moan, but she managed to keep her body in control.

Most of his customers would immediately begin gushing with Yin Qi once Su Yang used this technique, but this young lady was stronger than she appears.

'Not bad...' Su Yang smiled when his technique didn't work on this mysterious young lady.

"Do you want to turn around?" Su Yang asked her a few moments later.

"Sure! I was close to falling asleep, anyway."

The young lady then flipped her body, allowing Su Yang's hands to roam all over her small chest and naked kitty.

Eventually, Su Yang slipped his fingers inside her cave.

"Aahh~!"

The young lady began moaning intensively, clearly feeling it.

However, it still wasn't enough to make her cave gush with Yin Qi....

After fingering the young lady for a few more minutes, Su Yang asked her, "Do you want more?"

"Of course!" She quickly responded.

Su Yang removed his clothes the next moment before positioning himself in front of her wet cave.

After rubbing his thick and hot rod between her slit for a few moments, Su Yang inserted it inside her cave, spreading it wide open.

The young lady's body trembled with delight for the first time.

"You don't have to go easy on me." She said to him.

Su Yang nodded and immediately began thrusting his rod, reaching the deepest parts of her cave with every single thrust.

"Oh~! Yes~! Give it to me! I have been yearning for this!"

Su Yang would go on to thrust his hips without any breaks for the next two hours, and in this time, the young lady had only released her Yin Qi three times, which was an incredible feat even though Su Yang wasn't using his full strength.

Of course, Su Yang could quickly increase the intensity until she could no longer endure it, but he didn't want to rush things, especially since he had no reason to.

"Are you tired already?" The young lady asked him with a smirk on her pretty face.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "If you can make me tired, I will massage you whenever you want for as long as you want— as long as it's after hours."

"Deal!"

The young lady suddenly stood up and pushed Su Yang on the bed.

She then sat on him and began riding his stiff rod as though it was a horse for many hours without stopping.

"Is the Manager not returning? It's already been hours." Mei Xing sighed as she laid on the bed with Mei Ying.

"He's most likely going to be with her for the rest of the night since she paid so much money." Mei Ying said.

"I guess so..."

Meanwhile, back at the young lady's room, Su Yang laid on the bed with a look of disbelief on his face, his body soaked in sweat.

'Just who is this woman? I cannot see her cultivation, but it's definitely much higher than mine!'

Su Yang thought to himself.

"What's the matter? Finally finished?" The young lady asked him with a wide smile on her face.

"Yes, I am exhausted. You win this one." Su Yang said.

Even though he lost to this unknown girl, he was neither disappointed nor too prideful to admit his loss.

After hearing Su Yang's words, the young lady suddenly snapped her fingers, creating a powerful concealment formation around the room.

Su Yang immediately frowned at this, and he asked her, "Who are you?"

The young lady chuckled gracefully before speaking, "You've really lost your edge after two thousand years, Su Yang."

"What...?" Su Yang's eyes widened with shock after hearing his name come out of her mouth.

The young lady then retrieved a pill from her storage ring before swallowing it.

The next moment, this young lady transformed into an exceedingly beautiful woman that could only be described as a true goddess.

"Do you recognize me now, Su Yang?"

Chapter 998: Xing Aiying

"Xing Aiying?" Su Yang muttered her name when he saw her face that was the definition of ethereal beauty.

The beauty who turned out to be Xing Aiying, the master of formations and illusions, pounced on Su Yang like a starving tiger and said, "You can remove your disguise now. I have this entire building secured."

Hearing her words, Su Yang removed his disguise, returning to being a handsome young man.

Xing Aiying chuckled when she saw Su Yang's appearance, and she spoke, "I heard from Sister Ziyi that you look much younger than before, and I must say, you definitely meet my expectations!"

"I knew that you guys would eventually start showing yourselves, but I didn't expect it to be this soon." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

And he continued, "How have you been, Aiying? It's been 2,000 years."

"It's been too long, you idiot!" Xing Aiying said as she lowered her body and hugged him tightly.

"I'm sorry for leaving you ladies like that..." Su Yang gently combed her silky hair with his fingers, and he had a good feeling that he'll be repeating such words many more times in the future when he reunites with the others.

"I have heard of your situation from Sister Ziyi, but I want to hear it from you, Su Yang. Tell me. What happened?" Xing Aiying asked him after wiping her tears on his shoulders.

"I will tell you everything, but it's going to take a while."

"Make it quick, because I only have two months with you," she said.

"Two months...? Is that what you ladies agreed on?"

"Yes, to make things fair for everyone until you permanently return to us."

"I will try my best to not make you ladies wait too long."

Su Yang then began to tell his story to Xing Aiying, who listened intensively.

After listening to the whole story, Xing Aiying released a long sigh.

"It sounds like to me you had a great vacation in some mortal world while the rest of us suffered because we thought that you had died," she sighed.

"A-A vacation? I also suffered too, you know..." Su Yang said.

"I had to live every day worrying about everyone here, especially after learning about the situation from Lingxi. However, you're right. Compared to you ladies, my suffering was nothing in comparison."

"If there's anything I can do to make it up to you..."

"You impregnated Sister Ziyi..." Xing Aiying immediately responded.

Su Yang smiled and said, "You want a child, too? This is the first time you've asked me, you know."...

"Yes, I want a child, but I don't want one now," she said.

"If I suddenly have a child, people will definitely start questioning it. I guess Sister Ziyi was too excited to think at that moment, but once the world realizes that Luo Ziyi is pregnant, they will begin to search for the father."

"Luckily for her, she can make excuses for the child since she's the only one who's pregnant."

"However, if everyone who is affiliated with you is suddenly pregnant, it will raise too many suspicions." Xing Aiying explained to Su Yang her reason for not wanting to bear his child right now, which made perfect sense.

The entire world is aware of their relationship with Su Yang, and if all of them suddenly became pregnant, one would begin to wonder if Su Yang was actually still living somewhere, secretly impregnating his women.

"Now that you mention it... That would definitely be a major problem. Fortunately, you opened my eyes before I impregnated the others." Su Yang said, thinking to himself that he has to control himself and not impregnate everyone that asks him even if he really wants to.

"But then again, it might take us a few thousand years before we can actually conceive, so unless you plan on taking that long to return to us, it's okay to impregnate us." Xing Aiying added.

"A few thousand years, huh? Hopefully, I can deal with my problems much quicker."

"By the way, what are you doing now? I know that you're trying to enter the Boundless Yin Yang Sect, but what's your progress like?" Xing Aiying then asked.

"It started out a little slow, but things are picking up now that I am working inside the Red Light District with a Medallion of Pleasure. It'll only be a matter of time before someone from the Boundless Yin Yang Sect shows up," he said.

Xing Aiying then poked his nose and said with a cheeky smile on her face, "At your current level, I'm not sure they'll even accept you."

Su Yang chuckled at her words and said, "Did you really think that I would go all out on a customer? I will show you the real me tomorrow night."

"However, unless the Boundless Yin Yang Sect increased their standards significantly, I will have no problem entering their sect at my current level."

"I did a little research before coming here, and the Boundless Yin Yang Sect has indeed increased their standards 10 years ago. Of course, knowing you, it'll still be a breeze to enter," said Xing Aiying.

"But what's going to happen to your business here once you leave? Do you intend on giving it to those two girls working for you?"

"Mei Xing and Mei Ying? Even if I give it to them, they most likely won't accept it. I will see what they want to do when the time comes." Su Yang said.

"You really care about them, huh? Should I start calling them 'sisters' now?" Xing Aiying asked, indicating that he might accept them into the family.

"Who knows." Su Yang said with a profound smile on his face.

The two of them continued to spend the rest of the day talking to each other.

The following morning, Su Yang asked her, "What are you going to do now? Want to work for me?"

"I will enjoy being spoiled by you as a customer for now," she said with a smile before disguising herself again.

Chapter 999: Xing Aiying(2)

Once Xing Aiying left the room, Su Yang also returned to his disguise and made his way back to Mei Xing and Mei Ying.

"Manager, where have you been the whole night?" Mei Xing asked him as she prepared herself for work.

"I was serving the customer," he calmly said.

"For the whole night? That's amazing! Most customers would not last an hour, much less the whole night!" Mei Xing expressed her admiration for the customer.

"She's a special one alright." Su Yang chuckled.

Once they were all prepared, everyone went to work.

"Welcome to the Heavenly Massage!" Mei Xing greeted the customers.

Meanwhile, inside the massage room, Xing Aiyong was casually sitting at the corner of the room.

"Are you sure you don't want to work for me? You'll look less suspicious like that." Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"I can be your assistant in name," she said.

"As you wish, princess."

Sometime later, someone knocked on the door.

"Come inside." Su Yang said.

"It's me, Manager." Mei Xing entered the room a moment later.

"Hm? Did something happen?" Su Yang asked her, as she rarely leaves the reception desk.

"You have a special guest..." Mei Xing then stepped aside, allowing the handsome middle-aged man behind her into the room.

"Lu Gu of the Peach Blossom Delicacy. I am also an owner of a Medallion of Pleasure, and I decided to stop by when I heard that we have a new medallion holder. Nice to meet you."

Lu Gu politely greeted Su Yang.

"Nice to meet you. Xiao Yang." Su Yang returned the greeting.

And he continued, "How can I help you?"

"Don't mind me. I am just here for a quick introduction today. We can sit down and talk another time."

After saying that, Lu Gu turned around and walked out of the place, leaving Mei Xing speechless.

"What's the Peach Blossom Delicacy? Sounds like a brothel." Su Yang asked afterward.

"Because it is a brothel, one of the best in this city— at least that's what I heard." Mei Xing said.

"They have the prettiest ladies, and they are all highly skilled in the art of pleasure."

"Where did you hear such information?" Su Yang looked at her with raised eyebrows.

"From the ladies in my previous workplaces. They would always talk about the Red Light District and the places they wish to work in, and the Peach Blossom Delicacy is one of them."

Mei Xing then turned to look at Xing Aiying.

"Aren't you that customer asking for room services yesterday? What are you doing in the massage room?" Mei Xing questioned her.

"I am working as his assistant," she casually responded....

"What!" Mei Xing expressed great surprise upon hearing this information.

How could the manager hire another worker without even consulting them first?!

"Sorry, but I didn't get the chance to tell you last night, and I forgot to this morning, since it was a very sudden decision."

"Hello, little sister! You can call me Sister Aiying!" Xing Aiying greeted Mei Xing with a friendly smile.

"M-Mei Xing..." she responded.

"I look forward to working with you, little sister!"

Mei Xing went back to the reception desk shortly after while Xing Aiying went back to her room since Su Yang was receiving his first customer.

At the end of the day, Su Yang explained the situation to the Mei Family.

"That girl I hired turned out to be the daughter of one of my close friends, and she wants to experience working for me for a little, so I hired her."

"I see... That makes more sense." Mei Xing nodded as though she understood the situation.

"Also, she's been suffering from loneliness, so I will stay in the same room as her."

Although Mei Xing wanted to sleep beside him, she didn't say anything and nodded her head.

Sometime later, Su Yang went to Xing Aiying's room to make up for the time that he's been missing, which will definitely take more than two months to fully compensate.

"Are you sure you want to leave those two alone?" Xing Aiying asked him.

"They seem very dependent on you."

"Yes, and I would even say that they're too dependent on me. I need to teach them to care for themselves in case we cannot stay together in the future."

Xing Aiying then said, "I am a generous sister, so I will sacrifice some of my time with you to let the junior sisters have some time with you once in a while."

"But I will have you to myself for this entire week! This is not debatable!"

"Yes, yes, my little princess." Su Yang said with a smile on his face as he entered the bed with Xing Aiying.

After a long session of cultivation that left them both covered in sweat, Xing Aiying started a conversation with Su Yang.

"Hey, Su Yang... Do you remember that day you came to my family to learn about formations?" She suddenly asked him.

"Of course. You were only a little princess that just started her cultivation at that time, and you would always skip training to bug me to play with you." Su Yang said.

"And I remember how you messed up my parents' relationship by sleeping with my mother, instantly sending the entire family into disarray. You know, my family still hates you even after your 'death'."

"You're still mentioning that? You know it was your mother who seduced me, not the other way around. Your father was also neglecting her, which is the biggest reason she came to me."

"Of course, I know that. If I blamed you, I wouldn't have followed you, right?"

"Speaking of your family, how are they doing? Are they still angry at you for leaving the family?"

"Obviously! There's no way they'd ever forgive me! They still send letters to me every few hundred years just to state their disappointment!"

"What about your mother?"

"Who knows. She's probably still traversing the Four Divine Heavens, something she started doing after divorcing my father." Xing Aiying shrugged in a casual manner.

Chapter 1000: Do You Want to Try It?

"Even though we don't know her situation, I'm sure that my mother is fine. She's a tough one, after all." Xing Aiying said.

She then turned to look at Su Yang and asked him with a solemn expression, "Su Yang... Do you think we will ever return to how we used to be?"

"Of course. Although I don't know when it'll happen, I will try my best to make it happen as soon as possible."

"I look forward to that day," she chuckled.

"Anyways, are you ready for another session? We still have an hour before the store opens."

"Let's do it." Su Yang nodded, and they proceeded to cultivate with each other for the next hour until it was time to open the store.

"Good morning, Manager." Mei Xing greeted him with a wide smile on her face when she noticed him approaching the reception desk right before the store's opening.

"Morning... Hm?" Su Yang stopped walking when he noticed something different about her.

"You have successfully managed to enter the Elementary Spirit Realm? Congratulations on taking your first step towards becoming a true cultivator."

Indeed, Mei Xing had finally managed to comprehend the cultivation technique and become a cultivator last night.

"This is all because of you, Manager! Thank you for giving me this opportunity!" She said.

"How are you feeling?" Su Yang then asked her.

"I am feeling great! In fact, I have never felt any better! My body is gushing with energy! I feel like I can work an entire week without any rest right now!" She exclaimed with an eager face.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't get too excited. Although you have managed to become a cultivator, you still need to rest properly."

Mei Xing nodded, and then she asked, "Manager, what should I do now that I am a cultivator?"

"There's only one thing you can do— continue to cultivate."

"Eh? I still have to cultivate even though I am already a cultivator?" Mei Xing said.

"Of course. Just because you've become a cultivator doesn't mean you can stop cultivating."

"I will teach you more about cultivators later since we have to open the store now."

"Okay!" Mei Xing nodded eagerly.

After opening the store, Su Yang returned to the massage room while Mei Xing greeted the customers.

At the end of the day, after closing the store, Su Yang went to Mei Xing's room and lectured her about cultivators.

"You may have become a cultivator, but you're only at the lowest level. If you want to actually achieve something as a cultivator, you'll need to continue cultivating to increase your levels because at your current level, you're not much different when compared to a mortal who has never cultivated before."

"So I just need to continue cultivating until I reach a sufficient level?"

"Yes, but almost every cultivator will cultivate until they reach their limit."

"How many levels are there in cultivation?" Mei Xing then asked.

"There are five major realms, each consisting of minor realms, and each realm will have 9 total levels. For example, you're currently at the first level of Elementary Spirit Realm, which is the lowest realm." ...

"Once you have absorbed enough spiritual energy, you will be able to breakthrough to the second level of Elementary Spirit Realm."

"You will continue this until you reach the ninth level, and once you breakthrough that level, you will enter the next minor realm, which is the Profound Spirit Realm."

Mei Xing's mouth dropped wide open as she listened to Su Yang's lecture on cultivation.

"T-There are so many levels! How long does it usually take for one to increase a single level?" She then asked.

"That will vary from person to person depending on their cultivation talents. Some could take a single day to breakthrough while others might need a week— even month to breakthrough, and the higher you go, the longer it will take for someone to increase a single level."

"Cultivation is a long process that requires a strong will and patience since it will take years upon years, and even then, you might not reach the apex."

"Do you still want to become a cultivator?" Su Yang then asked her.

"I do!" Mei Xing nodded without hesitation.

"Then good luck." Su Yang said to her with a smile.

Although Mei Xing's cultivation talents were subpar at best, he could easily fix that with some heavenly treasures. However, he didn't want to give these treasures to her so early, as he wanted to make sure that she won't suddenly give up on cultivation.

"Thank you, Manager! I will immediately start cultivating right now!" Mei Xing said as she took a seat on the floor and began cultivating.

Mei Ying couldn't help but smile after seeing her daughter acting so eager to cultivate.

Su Yang looked at her and asked, "Do you also want to try cultivating?"

"Me? I don't think I will be a good cultivator." Mei Ying shook her head.

"What makes you think that?" Su Yang then asked.

"I don't think I have the patience for it, and I am already too old to start cultivating. Don't most people start cultivating before they can even run?"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "It'll be fine even if you start late. Only those racing against others would care about such things."

"Even if you say that..." Mei Ying turned to look at Mei Xing and sighed, "I don't think I can sit there all day doing nothing. It seems very boring if you ask me."

"If you think cultivation is boring, why don't you try dual cultivation?" Su Yang suggested.

"Dual... cultivation?" Mei Ying raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

Although she has heard this term many times before, she never really understood the meaning behind it.

"Dual cultivation is when two people embrace each other for the purpose of cultivating, which makes things less boring." Su Yang explained to her.

"You can cultivate in such a manner?" Mei Ying mumbled in a dazed voice.

"Yes."

Su Yang then approached Mei Ying before whispering in her ears, "Do you want to try it?"